Lettres Moſcovites:

Muscovite letters

OR,

MUSCOVIAN LETTERS.

CONTAINING,

An ACCOUNT of the FORM of GOVERNMENT, CUSTOMS, and MANNERS of that great *Empire.*

WRITTEN

By an *Italian* OFFICER of Diſtinction.

Tranſlated from the *French* ORIGINAL,
Printed at PARIS 1735,
By WILLIAM MUSGRAVE, Eſq;

Suave, mari magno turbantibus æquora ventis,
E terra magnum alterius ſpectare laborem.

LUCRETIUS.

'Tis pleaſant, when the Seas are rough, to ſtand
And view another's Danger, ſafe at Land.

CREECH.

LONDON:

Printed in the YEAR M.DCC.XXX.VI.

BRITISH MUSEUM

TO

His GRACE

THE

Duke of *RICHMOND*.

My LORD,

AS there is a Pleaſure in owning Obligations which it is an Honour to have received; I moſt humbly beg Leave of Your GRACE to acknowledge my Gratitude hereby.

The Favour I have to ask, is, that in the Peruſal of theſe Letters, Your GRACE will give Attention to the Truth they contain. They were written to ſatisfy the Curioſity of an intimate Friend, as the French *Editor thus relates,* viz.

THE Public will, doubtleſs, ſays he, be deſirous to know by what Accident theſe *Letters* fell into my Hands, and what induced me to publiſh them. I do not queſtion, but many will be apt to blame my Temerity, in daring to expoſe the *Foible* of ſo powerful a Nation. To theſe Criticks I ſhall only anſwer, that the Intereſt of all the reſt of *Europe* has, with me, taken Place of every other Conſideration. Beſides, our Author ſays no more than the bare evident Truth: And, for my Part, I ſhall think my Labour more than recompenc'd, if the reading of theſe Letters may have the wiſh'd-for Effect, to deter every Man of Worth from travelling into *Muſcovy*, where he would run the Risk of being expoſed to the ſame Tragical Events our *Italian* here relates.

It was by a very extraordinary Accident, no leſs than that of a Shipwreck, that theſe Letters fell into my Hands. The Author of them was reſerved for this new Misfortune, which, in all Probability was the laſt of his Life. We may preſume he did not ſurvive this fatal Event, and may, therefore, properly apply the following Words to his Caſe:

Fortuna libera mors eſt.

This Misfortune, perhaps, befell him in the Voyage, which, towards the Concluſion of his *laſt* Letter, he ſays he was juſt upon the Point of undertaking: But it is not very material, when and where it happened. Let it ſuffice, that a Trunk, which drove on Shoar, falling into my Hands, I obſerved a Paper paſted in the

Inſide

Inſide of the Lid, which contained the following Inſcription:

Duræ ac diræ Captivitatis
Apud barbaros Muſcovitas *ſatis fortit toleratæ*
Sarcinæ
Succeſſoribus ſervatæ ac relictæ
Cum monitu
Ne adeant ad iſtam inhumanam Nationem,
Niſi ferro & igne eam depopulandam.
Sed ſi talis non datur facultas
Saltem ſequentes preces quotidie
Ex toto corde effundant.
In MUSCOVITAS cæleſtia templa ruinent,
Terraque ſe pedibus raptim ſubducat, & omnes
Inter per miſtas Terræ Cælique ruinas
Corpora ſolventes, abeant per inane profundum,
Temporis ſtet puncto nihil extet reliquiarum,
Deſertum præter ſpatium, & primordia cæca. *

This Inſcription excited my Curioſity; and examining the Trunk, in which I, at firſt, only ſaw ſome old Cloaths, I diſcovered a Bundle of Papers, which put a Stop to my Enquiry for the preſent; I found them to be Letters, but the Hand they were written in was almoſt illegible, from whence I concluded, they had been wrote in a great Hurry. I made a Shift to read them, tho' not without a great deal of Pains, and was ſenſibly moved with the Author's Misfortunes. I was before partly acquainted with what he writes of the *MUSCOVITE Government*, their *Power*, *Finances*, and *Miniſtry*: But I was an entire Stranger to all the reſt, and not a little ſurprized

* *The laſt four Lines of this Inſcription are from* Lucretius

to find, that the Pains *PETER* I. had taken to civilize this Nation, were hitherto fruitleſs.

It is aſtoniſhing, that notwithſtanding all which has been done, for above a Century, to bring theſe People off from their native Barbarity, they, to this Day, retain the ſame Savage Cuſtoms and Manners as will appear from theſe Letters.

What Idea then muſt we not form of the *Foreigners*, who are at the Head of the Adminiſtration, in that Country, and who, in the moſt flagrant Manner, abuſed the Confidence repoſed in them, by the beſt of PRINCESSES? Muſt they, of Neceſſity, as ſoon as they ſet Foot in the *Ruſſian* Dominions, become very *Muſcovites*? I was not entirely ignorant before, of the Conduct of theſe Miniſters: But I could never have believed them capable of carrying Matters this Length. I am aſſured from very good Hands, that their whole Aim was to fill their own Coffers, that they might be able to ſcreen themſelves againſt every future Event; and they are probably ſo far right: For without any great Skill in Aſtrology, I would venture to preſage, what will be their Fate, whenever the Empreſs, who is now their Support, comes to die. In the mean Time, let them think their Meaſures ever ſo ſecure, I very much queſtion, whether they will eſcape the Storm they are threatned with, if every the Illuſtrious PRINCESS, who has an inconteſtable Right to that Crown, acceed to the Throne.

The Manner in which ſhe is treated by theſe Miniſters, cries aloud for Vengeance: For, inſtead of reſpecting her, as the preſumptive Heir

of

of a vaſt Empire: They do not ſo much as allow her where withal to ſupport her Dignity, and to maintain her antient Domeſticks, who chuſe rather to linger on in Miſery, than to quit her Service. They have even the Cruelty to keep her in a Sort of Bondage, which deters every one from making their Court to her, and is the Occaſion of her being abandoned by the whole World. This is no Secret to thoſe who travel into that Country, and when they return, they ſpeak of it with the utmoſt Indignation: But, at the ſame Time, they are too well acquainted with the excellent Qualities and Clemency of the preſent Empreſs, to lay any Part of the Blame on her.

The *Foreign Miniſtry* are the Authors of all this Evil; and as they are not inſenſible how ill they have deſerved, there is Reaſon to believe they will employ all their Skill to keep the next Heir from the Throne. However, notwithſtanding their utmoſt Efforts, I very much doubt of their Succeſs. They are, indeed, at preſent, abſolute Maſters, and diſpoſe of every Thing at their own Will: But they may probably be diveſted of this Authority, which they now abuſe with Impunity, whenever a Matter of that Importance, in which all the Powers of *Europe* ought to concern themſelves, is brought upon the Carpet.

The very ſame Reaſons which neceſſarily prompt this *Foreign Miniſtry* to aim at the *Excluſion* of the PRINCESS, will of courſe engage the Native *Muſcovites* to give her their *Suffrages*: And if the *latter* gain their Point, I do not doubt but the *former* will meet the Fate they

have deſerved. By this Means the *Muſcovites* may ſhake off the heavy Yoke which they now bear, and I dare anſwer for them, they will not let ſo favourable an Opportunity eſcape. In this Caſe, theſe *Foreign Gentlemen* will find themſelves in great Danger: I adviſe them to be early upon their Guard, and I hope they will make a right Uſe of the charitable Advice I give them. I likewiſe hope they will not take it amiſs, that I print theſe Letters, nor will complain of my Conduct, with Regard to them. They will, I flatter myſelf, thank me, for the Regard I have ſhewn for them, in following my Author, who is ſo candid to conceal the Names of all his moſt inveterate Enemies, and only to mention thoſe of the Perſons to whom he was obliged.

As I am perfectly acquainted with all the Intrigues of the *Muſcovite* Miniſtry, it would be no difficult Thing for me to give an exact Deſcription of thoſe who are at the Head of the Affairs of that Kingdom: But, as well out of Prudence, as Caution, I ſhall be contented with what I have already ſaid.

As for the *Muſcovites*, I ſhall not need to make any Excuſe on their Account: They are not a People to take Pet at ſo ſmall a Matter, and they will themſelves find, that what is advanced, with Reſpect to them, is nothing in Compariſon, of what might be ſaid againſt them.

After having ſatisfied my Curioſity with Regard to theſe Letters, I, with Eagerneſs, returned to the *Trunk* which contained them, to examine

examine more narrowly what was yet behind. I there ſaw the famous *Night-Gown*, which the Author wore, to be taken Notice of by the Empreſs and her whole Court, when they paſſed under the Window of his Priſon. There were yet the ſame Sheep's-skin-Pelt, and the ſame Cap, which were of ſo much Service to him, in his Journey from *Caſan* to *Petersburg*. The *Trunk* was filled with tattered Cloaths, a few Shirts, and other Neceſſaries. Beſides theſe, I opened a *Hamper*, in which were ſome Bottles, Earthen Plates, and Wooden Forks. I, likewiſe, found an Iron Fork, much larger than the others, which probably the ſame our Author mentions in ſeveral Parts of his Letters, and which he imagined, he might have made an advantageous Uſe of, as a Weapon, in Caſe of Need. There was even the very Axe, by the Help of which he ſo dextrouſly opened his *Trunk*.

At Length, I was agreeably ſurprized with a Roll of Paper, which I, at firſt Sight, took for a Manuſcript: But after having unfolded it, with a great deal of Impatience, hoping to find ſome important Secret incloſed; I was amazed to ſee only a few blank Leaves, on which ſome few Characters were perceivable. I ſoon apprehended theſe to be the Papers he mentions to have writ upon with his Silver Pencil, without Ink, and which after the Misfortune he met with, of falling into a Pit, in *Courland*, were become illegible.

After having carefully examined, whatever was in the *Trunk*, I acquainted ſeveral Friends with my Reſolution of publiſhing theſe Letters: But I found their Opinions very various. I ſhall there-

therefore only mention ſome of the principal Reflections that were made on this Account.

One of the Events, which, among others, greatly ſurprized us, was that of the Attempt, which our Author endeavours to prove, was made to Poiſon him. We carefully examined his Allegations, and found them all well grounded. Let any Man judge with what Horror we conſidered ſo black, and ſo deteſtable an Action.

Having enquired into this important Point, the next Thing we fell upon was, his Attempt to diſcover the Original of the *Muſcovites*. As Novelty never fails of pleaſing, this Paſſage entertained us ſome Time, and every one was allowed to give his Opinion freely. At firſt, none would decide upon the Matter, for Fear of being deceived; ſome ſaid the Thought was ingenious, but had no Foundation: Others looked upon it as a Thing demonſtrated beyond all Contradiction.

While we were thus in Suſpence what to determine, one of the Company propoſed to look upon the Author's Opinion as a mere Conjecture. This every one approved of, and thereby an End was ſoon put to this Diſpute. This Perſon added, that if we would indulge him a Moment, he would ſet us right in ſeveral Circumſtances, which our Author had not mentioned, either becauſe they had eſcaped his Memory; or, perhaps, becauſe he never had an Opportunity of being informed of them. The whole Company having expreſſed an eager Deſire of hearing what he had farther to propoſe, he related a Fact of which we were all ignorant, tho' the Truth of it is in-

con-

conteſtable, *viz.* That the third Expedition of the *Scythians* into *Aſia* is fixed, by the moſt able Chronologiſts, to *A. M.* 3334, which is juſt 676 Years before the *Chriſtian-Æra*: This being premiſed, our Author might with Reaſon ſay, that the *Muſcovites* would be in the wrong, to complain of the Original he aſcribes to them; for if it be not one of the moſt illuſtrious, it is, at leaſt, one of the moſt antient. He acquainted us farther, that the City, which he calls the *City of Slaves*, is now known by the Name of *Clopigorod*, and is ſituated in the very Country, thro' which theſe wretched People made their Retreat. Theſe Illuſtrations, put us to reflect upon the Fact in Queſtion, not only as probable, but as an evident Truth.

While we proceeded in the Peruſal of theſe *Letters*, every one gave their Opinions, and ſome made very judicious and curious Reflections. But the reading of the *laſt* Letter, made us almoſt forget all that had been ſaid on the foregoing. The ſingle Circumſtance of the *Paſs* given to our Author, fixed the Attention of the whole Company. This Procedure of the *Muſcovites*, by which they expoſed him to be looked upon as the moſt baſe and vileſt of Men, excited a general Indignation in us. Every one exclaimed againſt this Piece of flagrant Injuſtice, and the *Muſcovites* were treated as they deſerved. Who could blame us? Can they ſay any Thing in Juſtification of themſelves, for ſullying the Reputation of a *Man of Honour*, without any Cauſe, and brand him with the Character of a Spy, in a ſtrange Country? Was it not enough, that they had detained him ſo long in a grievous Captivity, wherein they had ſubjected him to a thouſand

Evils?

Evils? A Man of Worth would much rather chuſe to dye, than to ſuffer ſuch a Blemiſh on his Reputation.

Juſt as we were going to part, a Gentleman asked, if there was not any one amongſt us, inclinable to take a Voyage to *Muſcovy*, in Hopes of making his Fortune? This Propoſal ſurprized us all, ſo much, that we could not but turn it into Ridicule; and ſoon replied in the Negative, alledging, that we ſhould expect the ſame Fate which our Author had undergone. This, ſays he, is the very Anſwer I expected: For theſe *Letters* I muſt own are a ſufficient Warning to all Strangers, *Felix quem faciunt*, &c. how they truſt to *Muſcovite* Integrity. For which Reaſon the publiſhing of theſe will be a Public Benefit. I replied, that in Regard to the favourable Judgment they had formed of theſe Letters, I ſhould not heſitate, but would forthwith print them; but begged Leave to make one Obſervation which eſcaped their Notice, *viz.* That the *Muſcovites* themſelves, and even their *Foreign Miniſtry*, under whoſe Rule they are, ſo far from having Reaſon to complain of the Publication of theſe *Letters*, might be greatly benefitted by them, and could not but be thankful to us for it. For, we all know, that, the *Muſcovites* bear a mortal Hatred to the *Foreigners*, who are at the Head of their Affairs, and wiſh nothing more, than to be rid of them. On the other Hand, it is no leſs certain, that the *Foreigners*, who find they have Power enough to ſupport their Cabal, uſe all the Skill they are Maſters of, to keep other *Foreigners* from getting a Footing in that Court. It is therefore, doing conſiderable Service to Both, to publiſh theſe *Letters*: Since

it

it is not to be imagined, that thoſe who read them, will ever think of ſeeking an Employ in *Muſcovy*? By this Means, the *Muſcovites* will have no Reaſon to complain of Interlopers, and the *Foreigners*, who are now employed, need not be apprehenſive of loſing their Places, or being emulated by Rivals.

This Obſervation was approved by all who were preſent; but then another Difficulty was, at the ſame Time, ſtarted. It was objected, that theſe *Letters*, being written by an *Italian*, who, perhaps, had never any Thoughts of their being publiſhed, it would be abſolutely neceſſary to reviſe them, and to correct the Stile. To which it was judiciouſly anſwered, That a Work like this, which was written with no other Intent, but that of obliging a Friend, ought to be given to the Publick, without any Alteration; and it is hoped their intrinſick Worth will deſerve that they ſhould be tranſlated into all the *European* Languages, and may return to *Muſcovy* and prove a *Speculum* to thoſe of *other* Nations now reſident there. I do not in the leaſt doubt but the *Italians* in particular, would, in Vindication of their Countryman, be the firſt to put their Hands to the Plough, and other Nations, doubtleſs, will ſoon follow their Example. The *Germans* are principally concerned in this Matter, becauſe a great Number of their Countrymen go daily into *Muſcovy*, to *ſeek their Fortune*. The Example of ſome *falſe Brethren* ought not to hinder them from concurring in a Matter from whence ſo much Good may reſult: But if I ſhould even be deceived in my Hopes, I will never forſake ſo juſt a Cauſe during Life; but reſolutely maintain it.

Ipſum potius Acheronta movebo.

Here

Here the French *Editor concludes his Account of theſe* LETTERS, *and I will not preſume to detain Your* GRACE *any longer, than begging Leave to ſubſcribe myſelf,*

Your GRACE's

Moſt Dutiful,

And

Moſt Obedient,

Humble Servant,

W. M.

MUSCOVIAN

MUSCOVIAN LETTERS.

LETTER I.

SIR,

YOUR generous Behaviour towards Me may hereafter ſerve as an Example to all who make Profeſſion of Friendſhip. You had all the Reaſon in the World to believe me loſt to you, and for ever; and yet this did not hinder you from doing for me, whatever could be done by thoſe who are in a Condition to give daily Proofs of their Affection one to the other. This may be ſtiled Friendſhip even to the Dead: Among the Number of whom you could not but account me, ſince you had no News from me, and nothing but Death could be ſuppoſed to prevent my Writing. I am more than convinced of all the Effects you ſay my firſt Letter had upon you, and you will be as fully perſuaded of thoſe, which yours could produce in me. We know each other too well to need any farther Explication on this Head.

You ſay, you cannot forbear looking upon me, as a Perſon riſen from the Dead; and you are ſo

far right: I am not dead, indeed, because *Mors miseros fugit*; but I may, nevertheless, be esteemed a Ghost, since I am actually returned from another World, where I have made no short Abode. I learn every Day something new and surprizing, and that almost with the same Pleasure a deaf Man would, who should at once recover the Organs of Hearing. The earnest Desire you express, of having a circumstantial Account of my Adventures, looks as if you expected something extraordinary and wonderful, and therein, you are not mistaken. Had the same Things happened to another, I my self should have been backward in believing them: *Triste petit munus:* But should I refuse to satisfy your Curiosity, it would be the first Time you ever asked me any thing in vain. I shall not, therefore, hesitate a Moment, and the less, as a renewed Friendship requires more Assiduity than that which has never been broken. Ours may well be said to be renewed, since it is come back from the other World. What terrifies me is, that Accuracy of Relation which you require of me. For I am scrupulous enough with you, to endeavour strictly to obey you. Had it not been for an unhappy Shipwreck, which I suffered, at a Time when I might have thought my self least liable to a Misfortune of that Nature, I should, perhaps, have been able to fulfil your Desires. Some Memoirs which I had written in a very peculiar Manner, would have been of great Service to my History: But they are not at all legible. I have, indeed, preserved a short Journal, which now must supply every Thing. Had any one but you made this Request, I should have found more than one reasonable Excuse for a Denial. It is not a bare Relation of my Fate will content you; I must give you the History of a whole Nation, its Manners and Government, and describe it to you, in such a Light as I found it,

and

and not ſuch as, perhaps, you, and many others have believed it to be. It is true, ſince the Beginning of this Century, we have had a more extenſive Knowledge of this Nation, than formerly; and the great Reform which has been attempted in it, has furniſhed ample Occaſion for Diſcourſe. You will ſee how far it has ſucceeded, and whether the Pains which have been taken, and the Torrents of Blood which have been ſhed, have anſwered Expectation? It is generally ſaid, we muſt travel to know the Manners of People: But, to my Coſt, I have found, that it is requiſite to know them, before we leave our own Home. You will be the more convinced of this Truth, the farther you proceed in the Hiſtory of my Adventures.

In my former Letter, I advis'd you, that after the Misfortune which obliged me to leave a Country, I ſhall regret to the laſt Period of my Life, tranſported by a juſt Deſpair, I had no other Thoughts but of retiring to ſome Place, where I might be entirely unknown; but my evil Deſtiny continued to purſue me, and directed my Choice to the only Part of the World, where ſhe could exerciſe her moſt cruel Tyranny upon me: For I am perſuaded, there is no other Country, in which I could have been expoſed to the like Events. I ſhall leave you to judge of theſe Matters; be prepared only to give Attention to what I am about to relate. You will find ſome Things to amuſe and divert you, and others which will juſtly raiſe your Indignation, and compel you to allow, that it is with Truth, I ſay, I am returned from another World.

Being arrived at *Dantzick*, where I made ſome Stay, I reſolved to conceal my ſelf from the whole World, under the Character of an *Italian* Merchant, with the Name of *Roccaforte*. My Imagination probably ſuggeſted this Name to my Mind,

to encourage me to undergo all my Misfortunes with Conſtancy. In the mean Time, uneaſy, and tired as I was, with a painful Journey by Land, I was for trying if I could leave ſome Share of my Sorrows there, and embarked, in the Beginning of *May*, 1733. on Board a ſmall Veſſel, bound for St. *Peterſburg*, whither my Inclinations led me.

We departed from the Harbour the next Day, with a tolerable good Wind; but the Day following, about the ſame Hour, were again in the ſame Place, having been obliged to return faſter than we ſet out. We hoiſted Sail, a ſecond Time: But the Inconſtancy of the Weather, and the Violence of the Winds, drove us, for the ſpace of a Fortnight, ſometimes on the Coaſts of *Pomerania*, ſometimes on thoſe of *Denmark*; now on the *Swediſh* Coaſts, and then on the *Livonian*; where a Sight of the Iſland of *Dagho* had like to have coſt us dear, by the Unſkilfulneſs of our Pilot. A Want of Proviſions began to augment our Fears, the Voyage from *Dantzick* to *Peterſburg* being generally eight or ten Days, whereas we had been already fifteen, at Sea. We were often in Sight of the Iſland of *Gothland*; but with ſuch ſtormy Weather, as obliged us to keep the Sea. At Length, we happily gained the Eaſtern Coaſt of that Iſland, where, among a Number of Rocks, we found a proper Anchorage. It was with great Pleaſure I went on Shoar, where the firſt thing I obſerved was, by certain Marks, that the Sea was retired from that Place: The next Day, I was fully convinced of it, and ſaw that it had left a good half League of dry Land. We were ſo fortunate to find a Houſe, and whatever we wanted to re-victual our Ship.

During our Stay there, which was three or four Days, I diverted my ſelf with taking long Walks, and I found very pleaſant ones all along the Shoar, with

with Situations very proper for the Abode of a Wretch like my ſelf. You will laugh at another Remark I made, in this Iſland; which is, that of one Species of Birds, common every where elſe, at leaſt in *Europe*, and that ſmall part of *Aſia*, I have travelled through, I mean *Sparrows*, not any are to be ſeen there. If you ask me the Reaſon of it, I ſhall ingenuouſly confeſs my Ignorance, ſince there are many other Kinds of Birds. I could gladly have ſtaid ſome Days longer, in this charming Solitude: But the Time for our Departure was come, and we were deſtined to be, another Fortnight, the Sport of the Winds, which, at length, drove us into the Port of *Revel*.

Theſe Accidents, which happened to me in my Voyage, were deſigned, by Fate, to give me a Foreſight of what I was to expect when arrived in Port: But I was not capable of Reflection; my Thoughts were bent on nothing but carrying my Deſpair and Sorrows to a Place, where they might not be ſeen or known by any one. After having furniſhed ourſelves with ſome Proviſions at *Revel*, we put to Sea again, and, not to tire your Patience any longer, after a moſt unfortunate Voyage of ſix Weeks, we arrived, the 20th of *June*, at *Peterſburg*.

Ergo erat in fatis Scythiam *quoque viſere noſtris!*

But before I ſuffer this Exclamation to carry me too far, I muſt ſolemnly proteſt, that being about to treat of the *Muſcovite* Nation, of which, *Difficile eſt Satyram non ſcribere*, I except the Auguſt SOVERAIGN, who now rules it, for whom I have the moſt profound Veneration. I am acquainted with her extraordinary Qualities, and eſpecially her Religion and Piety. I am not ignorant, in what an excellent Manner ſhe diſpenſes her Juſtice and Clemency; but what is moſt admirable,

mirable, is her extreme good Nature, a Quality rarely to be met with on the Throne; which, however, ſhe poſſeſſes in the higheſt Degree of Perfection, and extends to the utmoſt of her Power, tho' always far ſhort of her Inclination: So that, in many Caſes, we might juſtly make her ſpeak the Language of *Iphigenia*,

Non ego crudelis, juvenes ignoſcite, dixit:
Sacra ſuo facio barbariora loco.

In ſhort, to ſay every Thing in a few Words; there is nothing wanting in her, that can be deſired; but, on the contrary, what ſhe might reaſonably expect, ſhe is far from poſſeſſing: Her Merits give her a Title to govern another Sort of People, who might be capable of knowing and perceiving the Happineſs they enjoy in her Perſon, and to have another Kind of Subjects about her, who might aſſiſt her in ſupporting the Burthen of ſo vaſt a Government.

As for the Illuſtrious *Princeſs*, the only Remains of the Family which now reigns; they only, who have not ſeen nor heard of her, can be at a Loſs to diſtinguiſh her from the reſt of the Nation. The Qualities of her Mind and Body are a Conjunction of whatever is excellent: And if I ſhould pretend to give you a Detail of what I have ſeen of one, and heard of the other, I ſhould not be ſo ſoon able to give you Satisfaction, with Regard to my ſelf. Let it then ſuffice, that ſhe poſſeſſes every Quality, in ſuch a Perfection; *Quâ fœmina naſci nulla poteſt.*

Having rendered, *Quæ ſunt Cæſaris Cæſari*, I return to my Voyage, which we purſued up the *Nieva*, till we came near a fine Bridge of Boats, that croſſes it. I would gladly have landed immediately; but the Officers, who were put on Board our Veſſel at *Cronſtadt*, would not ſuffer us to carry

ry the leaſt Thing from the Ship: I was, therefore, forced to ſtay on Board, and it was three Days before our Maſter could get his Clearances; which gave me not the beſt Idea of their Regulations with Regard to Trade. In this Interval, all I could do was to amuſe my ſelf with what came within my View. The firſt Thing which offered was the Bridge, which ſerves for a Communication of one Part of the Town with the other. It is little frequented, from whence I concluded the Place not populous, and I was not deceived. The Ships which are ranged on both Sides of the River, in a Symetrical Order, make a pretty agreable View, but the reſt is no way anſwerable to this Part of the Town, which may be called fine. Suffer me now to gueſs at your Deſires: I am perſuaded, that amidſt the Accuracy of the Relations you deſire from me, they do not extend to a Deſcription of Things; that would be an Entertainment too groſs for your refined Taſte; nor ſhall I want Matter, without that, to employ a good Part of your Time: For being to give you an Account of a Captivity, which laſted two whole Years, Circumſtances will offer, of ſufficient Importance to deſerve not to be treated in a *Laconic* Manner.

The firſt Perſon I became acquainted with at *Peterſburg* was a Merchant whoſe Name is *Mariotti*, a very honeſt Man, and to whom I am highly obliged. He aſſiſted me in every Thing within his Sphere, and I am perſuaded he would have done more had it been in his Power. I went to the *Roman Catholic* Church, and viſited the Fathers who officiated in it, whither a pretty many People reſorted. I there uſed my beſt Endeavours to get Information of ſuch Things as were moſt neceſſary, on my Arrival in a Country where I propoſed to ſettle. I picked up my Intelligences, ſome here, ſome there, and neglected no Opportunity to be inſtructed.

Thus, in a few Days, I eaſily perceived, this was no Country for my Purpoſe; but I was advanced too far to retreat. My Buſineſs was how to get into the Service; I adviſed with Mr. *Mariotti* about it: But he laid ſo many Difficulties before me, as threw me into an unuſual Diſorder.

While my Thoughts where thus employed what Courſe to take, I accidentally ſaw a Perſon, who I believed might know me, and beſides met with a very ſingular Adventure, which obliged me to take other Meaſures. I formed the Reſolution of going to *Perſia*, where I knew the Prince of *Heſſe-Homburg* commanded, and the Character I had heard of him gave me Room to hope, that if I made my ſelf known to him, he would not refuſe me the Honour of his Protection. I but juſt hint at theſe Matters now, becauſe you will find a particular Account of them, in a Petition I preſented to the *Czarina*'s Cabinet-Council. But I muſt acquaint you with the chief Motive that put me upon going to *Perſia*, which I could not inſert in that Piece, as you yourſelf will judge. Being continually inquiſitive after a Knowledge of Things, I likewiſe gathered all the News I could, not only what was publiſhed in the *Gazettes*, but what I could learn from the Perſons I converſed with. Among the latter was one who was perfectly acquainted with the Projects, Deſigns, and Preparations of the Court of *Petersburg*, and who knew the Strength, as well as the weak Side, of this Power, which now ſo much alarms *Europe*, tho' I ſee no Reaſon for it. By all I could learn, I was convinced, that the War in *Poland* was inevitable, and that if I engaged in the *Ruſſian* Service, I ſhould, perhaps, be obliged to draw my Sword againſt a Prince I reſpect, and againſt a Nation I ſhall love with my lateſt Breath, and to which I owe the little Knowledge I have in the Art of War. You know me

ſo

ſo much a *Frenchman* at Heart, to be intirely perſuaded, I ſhould rather quit the Profeſſion of a Soldier for ever, than engage againſt the Intereſt of King *Staniſlaus*, and the Troops employed to ſupport his lawful Rights. The Declaration made by the *French* King, to all the Miniſters I had ſeen, left me no Room to doubt, but he would employ all his Force in ſo juſt a Cauſe, for which the Honour of the *French* Name is ſo tenderly concerned. I leave you to judge, whether I could bear to be in the *Muſcovite* Army, in View of the Troops of *France*; I deteſt the very Thoughts of it. This was the true Motive which fixed my Reſolution of going to *Perſia*, and you are by this Time ſenſible I could not inſert it in the Petition mentioned above. As ſoon as my Deſign was formed, I ſpoke to my Friend *Mariotti* to look out for a Conveniency of going thither; and in order to provide what was moſt neceſſary for my Journey, I ſold a good Part of my Equipage, to raiſe Money. My next Care was to get a Paſs, which is not to be obtained without Difficulty, and at a great Expence, eſpecially if it be to go out of the *Ruſſian* Dominions: But as this was not my Caſe, I got off for four or five Rubles*: A ſhameful Practice, to oblige People to pay for a Paſs! What muſt a Perſon do who has but juſt enough to bear the Expences of his Journey? Why truly, he muſt remain there, and ſubmit to Slavery, as has been the Caſe of many. A Foreigner, who has lived ſome Time among them, finds it difficult to obtain his Diſmiſſion. They are no ſooner informed of his Intent, than they raiſe Suſpicions, and carry their Jealouſy and Diſtruſt to an Exceſs. Whoever has once got a Knowledge of their Affairs, muſt never hope to leave the Country. They imagine, they have Reaſon to apprehend ſuch a one would divulge their *Arcana*. What more ſenſible Evidence

* A *Ruſſian* Coin about the Value of a Crown.

dence can there be of the Weakneſs of their Government?

All I advance on this Head is but too well-grounded, and I could give a Number of Inſtances which would ſufficiently evince this Truth: But I ſhall confine myſelf to One, that of an *Italian*, who calls himſelf *Sava*, and who has rendered the Empreſs ſuch Services, as put it out of the Power of this Princeſs to acknowledge them. As his Caſe has been already made public, I ſhall not detain you with a long Account of it: And only add, that this Man, after having long ſerved the State, could not obtain Leave to paſs the Reſt of his Days with his Wife, at *Venice*. Does not this ſingle Inſtance of *Muſcovite* Politicks ſurprize you? For my Part, I think it the more ſhocking; as the Perſon I am ſpeaking of deſerves a better Fate. But to return to my own Concerns.

Having procured a Paſs, I wanted nothing but a favourable Opportunity of departing, and ſoon after one offered, ſuch, I thought, as my Heart could wiſh. I embraced it with the greater Pleaſure, as I was convinced I ſhould, by this Means, purſue my Journey, with Safety and Delight. It was not eaſy to foreſee, that ſuch an Opportunity could ever be the Source of a grievous Captivity, and of all my Misfortunes. You, without doubt, know, that the Emperor PETER I. founded an Academy of Sciences, which is yet in being, but in ſo confuſed a State, that the principal Members of it have deſired their Diſmiſſion. Perhaps, likewiſe, you have heard of an Expedition to the North-Eaſtern Parts of *Aſia*, to a Country call'd *Kamtſchatki*, in which the *Muſcovites* have already ſettled ſome Colonies. This Undertaking furniſhed me with the Opportunity I am ſpeaking of. Three Profeſſors of the Academy, one of Aſtrology, a ſecond of Hiſtory, and a third of Botany, were to be ſent to this Country,

and

and they, with ſeveral others, formed a ſort of Caravan. Their Way lay through the Kingdom of *Caſan*, which was likewiſe my Road to *Perſia*. As ſoon as I was informed, that theſe Gentlemen were preparing to depart, I did what I could to be one of the Company. I firſt enquired to whom I muſt make my Application, for this End, and was told to Monſ. *de l'Iſle*, Profeſſor of Aſtronomy, Brother of the late Monſ. *de l'Iſle*, the famous Geographer to his moſt *Chriſtian* Majeſty. This Gentleman left *France*, and went to *Petersburg*, in the Time of *Peter* I. who had deſired him of the *French* King. As I ſhall have frequent Occaſion, in the Sequel, to mention him and his Spouſe, I muſt not omit making you acquainted with their Characters; but I muſt previouſly tell you, that their Merit infinitely ſurpaſſes whatever I can ſay of them. Good Nature, Generoſity, Candour, and every other Quality, which can render a Perſon amiable, are perfectly united in them. I may ſay, in ſhort, they are an Honour to the *French* Nation. A rare *Phenomenon*, to preſerve ſo many good Qualities among a People, who hardly know one of them! Nothing can be a more convincing Proof of it, than what they did for me during my Captivity.

When I waited on Monſ. *de l'Iſle*, to concert, with him, the Meaſures I had to take; he received me with an unprecedented Politeneſs, and gave me a moſt favourable Reception. He told me, that he was not to go the Journey himſelf, but that it was his Brother, Monſ. *de la. Croyere*, who, without doubt, would rejoice at having my Company. I afterwards ſpoke of it to Monſ. *de la Croyere*, and to the other Profeſſors, who readily granted my Deſire. Some Days after, Monſ. *de la Croyere*, deſired me to come to his Houſe, in Order to depart, the next Day: But, their laſt Diſpatches not being ready, our Journey was de-

layed

layed a good while longer. During this Interval, Monſ. and Madam *de l'Iſle* compelled me to be with them, and treated me as an intimate Friend. There it was I got acquainted with Monſ. *du Vernoi*, a very learned Profeſſor of Anatomy, and a Man of unqueſtionable Worth: To whom I have great Obligations for Services done me; And as I ſhall mention him farther in the Sequel of my Hiſtory, I thought it my Duty to make you acquainted with him. As our whole Converſation at Monſ. *de l'Iſle*'s, turned upon the Expedition to *Kamtſchatki*, I had ſome Inclination to go thither my ſelf, and it was compatible enough with my Reſolution of being unknown. I opened my Mind to Monſ. *de l'Iſle*, and we debated on it ſome Days: But, upon mature Enquiry, finding neither Order nor Management in the Deſign, I thought no more of it. And, indeed, they were ſo ill prepared for it, that on the very Day intended for our Departure, we were obliged to put it off a Fortnight, to regulate certain Matters, which ought to have been provided for long before. Such is the Cuſtom of the Country; Nothing is done there *To-day*, every Thing is put off till *To-morrow*, which I have too often experienced to my Coſt, and been forced to put up with thoſe *To-days* and *To-morrows*, for three Months together.

At length, after many Delays, on the moſt frivolous Accounts in the World, we were upon the Point of departing: But two of theſe Gentlemen having ſome Doubts, I went before, with a Servant, Monſieur *de la Croyere* was ſo kind to give me. We agreed upon a Place, where we were all to meet, and purſue our Journey afterwards together. Monſieur *de l'Iſle* and his Spouſe, not ſatisfied with the Civilities they had ſhewn me, loaded me with ſuch a Quantity of Proviſions, as would

would have ſerved me quite to *Perſia*, had I been allowed to purſue my intended Journey thither.

The Day of my Departure was the 15th of *Auguſt*, O. S. I embarked on board a ſmall Veſſel as cuſtomary, and went up the River *Nieva* to the famous Canal of *Ladoga*. This Canal is ſituate in a very marſhy Soil, and is of a vaſt Extent; but I very much queſtion, whether the Advantages accruing from it anſwer the immenſe Sums it coſt at firſt; not to mention the prodigious Number of Lives ſacrificed in that Undertaking. I make little or no Doubt, but it will inſenſibly fall to Decay; becauſe it is hardly poſſible to keep it in Repair, without a conſiderable yearly Expence; and, on the other Hand, the *Muſcovites* are not enough inured to Labour to continue ſuch painful Works long.

From this Canal of *Ladoga*, I entered the River *Wolkowa*, in which there are Currents of an aſtoniſhing Rapidity, and very difficult to ſtem. The Violence of the Stream broke the Rope which drew my Barque; but, by good Fortune, it happened at a Place, where the Danger was not great, and all the Damage I ſuffered was being carried ſome Diſtance back again. However, not to incur the like Danger again, I took care always to land, when I found myſelf expoſed to it.

Theſe Currents, or rather Cataracts of the *Ladoga*, are a Hinderance to the Advantages propoſed by this Canal. The chief Aim of digging it, was to facilitate the Communication of the *Wolga* with the *Baltick*, and ſo far it has ſucceeded; becauſe, by this River, there is a very eaſy Paſſage even to the *Caſpian* Sea. It is, likewiſe, of great Service to the Tranſport from *Muſcow* to *Petersburg*. As for the Tranſport of Goods from *Petersburg* into the Country, I look upon this Deſign as very difficult. How is it poſſible Veſſels, heavy laden, ſhould

ſtem

ſtem theſe Currents? What Dangers would they not be expoſed to? And ſuppoſing it practicable, how few Merchants would be at the Expence of an Undertaking of this Nature?

Having paſſed theſe Currents, I continued my Journey through a Country equally populous and well cultivated. I traverſed the great *Novogrod*, which carried me into the Lake of *Imen*; from thence into the River *Miſta*, which I was likewiſe obliged to go up as far as *Bronitz*, the Rendez-vous appointed by my Friend *de la Croyere*. We both rejoiced at our happy Meeting, and after having continued our Journey ſome Days by Land, we embarked on the *Twerſa*, a little River, which falls into the *Wolga*, at *Twer*, whither we repaired. Here we were obliged to ſtay about ten Days, to fit out a large Barque, big enough for the whole Caravan. I muſt confeſs, this Delay was very tedious to me: And I could not conceive, how, in an Undertaking of this Importance, Meaſures could have been ſo ill concerted. But thus, as I obſerved before, it is with every Thing in *Muſcovy*; an eternal Slowneſs rules in all their Actions, and if any thing ever ſucceeds there, it is generally the Effect of meer Hazard.

All Things being ready for our Departure, Monſieur *de la Croyere* would take me into the ſame Cabbin provided for himſelf. I ſhall not give you any Account of my Remarks, nor of what happened in my Journey from *Petersburg* to *Caſan*. I had kept a little Journal, but the *Muſcovites* thought fit to take away this, and ſeveral other of my Papers. This petty Larceny ſhews the Character of the People: They were apprehenſive, the Uſe I ſhould make of this Journal might not turn to their Honour, and perhaps they were not miſtaken: This, however, is certain, that Diſtruſt is one of the evil Qualities of this Nation.

I think I promiſed to ſay ſomething of *Kamtſchatki*, and of the Expedition thither: it is time I keep my Word, and entertain you a Moment on that Head.

It is certain, that the North-Eaſt Part of *Aſia* differs very much from what it has been long believed to be. It was ſuppoſed to be bordered by the *Promontorium Glaciale*, or Cape of *Swetenoes*. But it is now diſcovered, that, at the End of this Cape, there is a large Continent which ſtretches North and South, for the Space of more than twenty Degrees, and forms a ſort of *Peninſula*, joining to that Part of *Aſia* only on the North. On the Weſtern Side of it, is a Gulph, which ſeparates it from *Siberia*, and on the Eaſtern Side is the Sea of *Japan*. Towards the South it is bordered by a very narrow Streight, full of Iſlands. For this Diſcovery we are indebted to the People who inhabit the moſt Northern Parts of *Siberia*. Some pretend it was made by Sea, by doubling the Cape of *Swetenoes*: Others, that it was made on the Land-ſide, by advancing very far into the Country; I ſhall not determine which is the right: But however this be, it is certain the Country is inhabited by divers Nations, and that, at this Time, a great Number of *Ruſſian* Colonies are ſettled there. PETER I. ſent a *Daniſh* Sea-Officer thither, called Captain *Berrin*; who, having undertaken the Journey by Land, traverſed *Siberia*, advanced to this very Place, and returned. What Diſcoveries this Captain made, I cannot pretend ſo juſtly to ſay: But it is to be preſumed, that whatever Meaſures have been ſince taken, are grounded on his Report. The ſame Officer has now undertaken this ſecond Journey thither, by Order of the Empreſs, who has intruſted the Direction of this Affair ſolely to him. He departed ſome Months before us, with a large Company, eſpecially

cially of Mariners, and a great Number of Artificers, who are to be employed in building ſeveral Veſſels there. The Profeſſors hoped to overtake them at *Tobolski*, the Capital of *Siberia*, with the reſt of the Caravan.

This Project was formed with ſeveral Views. The firſt is, to eſtabliſh a Trade with the *Japaneſe*. The ſecond, to work at the Mines, which are very rich and numerous, in the Country already known: And a third, to attempt new Diſcoveries towards *America*, which, perhaps, is not very far from thence; ſince the Bounds of the Northern Part of *California* are not yet known. It is even ſaid, that Captain *Berrin* has already diſcerned ſome Land on that Side. We muſt allow, that nothing has a more promiſing Appearance, than all theſe Views, and, if they ſucceed, great Advantages will enſue: But I very much fear, the Court of *Ruſſia* will be deceived in their Expectations, and am concerned for my Friend the Aſtronomer, who has engaged ſo unwarily in the Deſign. Their Meaſures have been hitherto ſo ill concerted, that, in all Appearance, this Enterprize will never ſucceed. The greater Part of thoſe employed therein are unexperienced Perſons, who have no Talent, nor have I obſerved either Diſcipline or Order among them. Nevertheleſs, a Scheme of this Nature, if well executed, would excite the Attention of all *Europe*, and be an inexpreſſible Glory to the Sovereign, under whoſe Reign it has been formed.

I ſhould be curious to know what the *Dutch* think of this Undertaking; they, who alone, in *Europe*, carry on a Trade to *Japan*. They would not have much Reaſon to be concerned at it: The *Muſcovites* are not a very expeditious People to ſettle ſuch a Commerce. But it may be objected, that the Face of Affairs may change in *Ruſſia*; the

The Inhabitants of it are not always the ſame; And after all, may not the Deſign, which miſcarried in the firſt Attempt, ſucceed in a Second? Vain Imagination! A Change in the *Muſcovites* is a *Phenomenon* which will not appear ſo ſoon, and which, I confeſs, I look upon as impoſſible. On the other Hand, there are, in the wiſe and mighty Republick of *Holland*, Politicians too refined, and Traders too knowing, not to be watchful for the Security of their Commerce; And if they find ſuch a Settlement likely to take Place, they will not want Means to prevent the Conſequences of it. The leaſt Suſpicions, dextrouſly inſinuated into the jealous Minds of the *Japaneſe*, would alone ſuffice to overthrow all the Schemes of the *Muſcovites*, were they even concerted with more Prudence and Wiſdom than they are.

My Journey to *Kamtſchatki* has been no leſs tedious than that from *Twer* to *Caſan*. We entered the little River of *Caſanka*, which begun to freeze, and going up it, arrived the 20th of *October* about Noon at *Caſan*, where I ſhall take ſome Days Repoſe. Do you the ſame, Sir, expecting a ſecond Letter, in which I ſhall acquaint you only with what regards my ſelf.

——*Et quanquam luctus renoventur amari Perpetiar memorare tamen.*

Yours, &c.

LETTER II.

SIR,

I Take the Advantage of ſtaying at *Caſan*, as well to recover my ſelf from the Fatigues of my Journey, as to retrieve, if poſſible, the Time I have loſt: But what Satisfaction can I make, for having kept a profound Silence with regard to you, for two whole Years together. The more I think of it, the more I am ſenſible of my Incapacity: And, indeed, what Poſſibility is there of expreſſing the Obligations I lye under, for what you have done in my Behalf! No, Sir, I am convinced, I ſhall never be in a Condition to make a Return adequate to your Goodneſs.

Nec ſi Neſtoreos compleam annos.

My laſt informed you of our Arrival at *Caſan*, the 20th of *October*. It then began to be ſo cold, that the River was half frozen over. Ihad ſo little Thoughts of making any ſtay there, that my firſt Care was to inquire, if there was any Veſſel bound for *Aſtracan:* But it was labour in vain, the Seaſon was too far advanced. I had no Remedy but to hire a Barque to my ſelf, and all Neceſſaries for my Journey were ſoon provided. My Friends were no ſooner informed of my Deſign, than they uſed their utmoſt Endeavours to diſſuade me from it. Monſ. *de la Croyere*, in particular, gave me ſuch an Idea of the Difficulties, and repreſented, in ſuch lively Colours, the Dangers, I was about to expoſe myſelf to, that I, at length, determined to wait for an Opportunity of continuing my Journey by Land:

It

It was next to impoſſible for me to reſiſt the preſſing Inſtances, which were made me on this Account. My Reſolution being fixed, a ſmall Lodging was provided for me, and as I foreſaw my Abode there might be long, I took care to buy thoſe Things, I ſhould ſtand in need of. The next Point was, what Character I was to appear under: After mature Conſideration, I concluded, it would not become me to remain wholly under Diſguiſe, and as a Vagrant. I did not in the leaſt doubt, but the Profeſſors made mention of me; But I was intirely at a Loſs what Conſtruction was put upon their Diſcourſe. Being informed that the Governor was a Perſon of Diſtinction, who had travelled, and ſpoke *French* and *Italian*, I took that Reſolution, which to me ſeemed alone becoming a Man of Honour. I paid him a Viſit, the 28th of *October*, and opened my ſelf to him, in the following Words:

" Sir, tho I am perſuaded, it is allowable to de-
" ceive the Publick, in Things which concern none
" but my ſelf, I am, at the ſame Time, convinced,
" it will not become me to impoſe upon a Perſon
" of your Quality and Character. My Paſs, you
" ſee, deſcribes me as a Merchant, by a feigned
" Name; But I muſt confeſs to you, that I am a
" Soldier, of ſome Diſtinction. My Deſign is to
" go into *Perſia*, to offer my Service to the Prince
" of *Heſſe-Homburg*, to be employed under him,
" in Her Majeſty's Army. I beg of you, Sir, to
" give me a Guard, that I may continue my Jour-
" ney in Safety." I told him my real Name, and the Reaſon, which had induced me to conceal it. He anſwered me courteouſly enough, but with ſome Perplexity. " I am ſorry (ſaid he) for your Miſ-
" fortunes, and ſhall take care for your Departure
" with the firſt Opportunity." Having, thereupon, made me repeat my true Name, he took it down in Writing. He continued his Diſcourſe to me in the

moſt obliging Manner; But perceiving his Countenance did not ſpeak the ſame Language, I replied: "Sir, as you may have ſome Scruple with Reſpect "to my Perſon, I here offer you my Sword, and "am ready to ſurrender my ſelf your Priſoner, "whenever you ſhall think proper, 'till you know "who I am, and in what manner I have behaved." To which he anſwered in theſe very Words: "Fear "Nothing, Sir, I am convinced by your Carriage "and your Diſcourſe, that you are the Perſon, you "ſay you are: Let nothing diſquiet you, and be aſ-"ſured a Paſſage ſhall be provided for you, in the "firſt Ship, that departs for *Aſtracan*:" Upon this, I took my Leave, without, however, knowing what Courſe to take: The Surprize I had obſerved in his Looks, was to me not the moſt auſpicious Omen.

When I left the Governour, I went directly to Monſ. *de la Croyere*, to acquaint him what had happened. I had too much Obligation to conceal any Thing from him. He had Company with him, ſo I did not think it proper to ſpeak of this Matter, 'till he was alone. I had hardly ſat down, when I ſaw the City-Major come in, at the Head of half a Dozen Soldiers, with their Bayonets on the Muzzles of their Muskets. He immediately demanded my Sword, which I gave him without Heſitation, telling him, the Governour might have received it himſelf, without taking this Step. He did not underſtand me, but behaved with much more Politeneſs, than is uſual in *Muſcovy*. I muſt do him the Juſtice to own, that of all thoſe I had any Concern with, his Carriage was the moſt Gentleman-like. I could almoſt ſwear he is of *Tartarian* Race; At leaſt his Shape and Phiſiognomy had very much the Reſemblance of that Nation, which has Nothing in common with the *Muſcovite*. He ſoon took Poſſeſſion of the Room I was in, and obliged Monſ. *de*

la

la Croyere, with his Company, to go out, and then leaving me to the Care of a Corporal and ſix Soldiers, who kept their Bayonets on the Muzzles of their Muskets, he returned to give the Governour an Account of his Expedition. I deſired Monſ. *de la Croyere*, when he left me, not to be uneaſy, neither on his own Account nor mine, aſſuring him, that the Regard he had ſhewn for me could never be of any Prejudice to him. The Major returned in about half an Hour, and, taking me in his Sled, carried me to my Lodgings, where all that belonged to me were examined with the greateſt Exactneſs. This was done by a young Man who had the Appearance of an Officer, but whoſe Carriage beſpoke him nothing leſs. Not the leaſt Thing, in my whole Equipage, could eſcape his Sight. He unfolded my Shirts, and folded them up again, to ſee if he could find any thing concealed in them. In ſhort, his Hands and Eyes were every where. The Major, who ſeemed pleaſed with his performing his Function with ſo much Care, told him, with a Sneer: *Thou wouldſt make an excellent* Valet de Chambre, *none better*. I took this young Man to be an Officer, by his Dreſs; But if he was ſo, judge what ſort of Officers there are in *Muſcovy*. After a nice Enquiry what was to be found, they bundled up my Books, and ſome Writings of no great Concern, which they ſeized and carried off.

Having thus diſpoſed of my Effects, the next Thing was to ſecure my Perſon. They carried me to the *Corps de Garde*, which is over-againſt the Governour's Houſe. I was there ſhut up, in the Officer's Room, where a Soldier was placed to guard me, within Sight, with his Sword drawn. I expected, with Impatience, that the Governour would either ſend for me, or let me know what he deſigned to do with me. It was already paſt Noon, and I ſaw no Body, but the Officer of the Guard,

and the Soldiers who went out and in. At length, a very ſlender Dinner was brought for the Officer, and another Perſon who was to dine with him. They were ſo civil to invite me to take Part with them. I returned them Thanks; But enquiring of them, by Signs, if the Governour would not ſend me my Portion likewiſe, they gave me to underſtand he would not. In vain I deſired to have ſomebody I could ſpeak with; I was told I was not to expect it. Hunger, in the mean time, preſſing, and ſeeing nothing brought me, I thought it was beſt to accept of their Offer. I neither ſaw nor heard of any thing farther, the whole Day; and Night being come, I was obliged to take up with a Bench inſtead of a Bed; where, however, I ſlept pretty quietly, after having taken a Knife out of my Pocket, which was troubleſome to me, and which was ſtolen before Morning, from the Table where I laid it.

I met with no better Uſage, the Day following: Having therefore expected my Deſtiny, to no Purpoſe, 'till Noon, I deſired to ſpeak with the Officer, to whom I gave to underſtand, by Signs, and pretty bluntly, that I was ill uſed; that he ſhould go to the Governour, and tell him, I expected he ſhould either ſend me an Interpreter, or ſuffer me to ſpeak to him my ſelf. This Officer, highly ſurprized to ſee a Priſoner, equally haughty in his Geſtures, and threatning in the Tone of his Voice, went immediately out of the Room, but returned in a Moment, to tell me the Governour was not at Home. Tho this Anſwer gave me little Satisfaction, I endeavoured to make him underſtand ſeveral other Things, but to no Purpoſe. He only perceived, that I wanted to know, whether I ſhould have any Thing ſent me to eat, and to this he again anſwered in the Negative. I plainly ſaw I was to be at my own Expence, and therefore threw a Ruble on the Table, and made Signs to have ſomething provided for me.

It

It may not be amiſs to obſerve here, that in the whole Kingdom of *Caſan*, a Ruble is a conſiderable Sum, ſufficient to maintain a Man elegantly for a whole Month. As Money is extream ſcarce in this Country, every thing is exceeding cheap. A Sheep is not worth above ten Pence, * a Hen a Penny, and 30 Eggs the ſame. For 4 or 5 Rubles you may buy the beſt Horſe, that is brought to Market, and the beſt Bullock is not worth above Two. You know, without doubt, that a Ruble is a Silver Coin, of about the Value of 4 Livres and a half, *French* Money.

They returned me my Change; but I ſoon perceived, that Stewards in *Muſcovy* were no more troubled with Honeſty, than in other Countries. I was, however, under a Neceſſity of being cheated in this Manner, during the whole Time of my Captivity. I thought my ſelf happy, when I met with People who were contented with a ſmall Gain: But this is a *Phenomenon* which rarely appears in *Muſcovy*. Pardon, I beſeech you, a ſmall Digreſſion. You may, perhaps, be curious to know my Bill of Fare; It conſiſted only in Bread, Beer, and a large Piece of boiled Sturgeon. I no ſooner ſat down to my ſhort Meal, than a Corporal, who was in the Room, came to offer me the Service of a Carver, with the ſame Knife which was ſtolen from me the Night before. I leave you to judge of my Surprize: I fell a laughing, and, at the ſame Time, laying hold of my Knife, I gave him to underſtand I could diſpenſe with his Office: But finding he would not let go his Hold, I began to talk big, and hector. My Guards were afraid, and thought proper to ſend for their Officer. He came in a great Fright, and being informed of the Matter, he offered me his Hand,

and

* I have tranſlated the *French* Word *Sous*, a Penny, becauſe we have no Denomination of Coin exactly adequate to it, tho' otherwiſe it is not worth above two Thirds of a Penny.

and made me give him my Word, that no Miſchief ſhould enſue. Satisfied with my Promiſe, he ordered my Knife to be given me, but I was obliged to return it again after Dinner. This ſhort Scene let me ſee into what Hands I was fallen, and by this I judged what Treatment I had to expect for the future.

Me ſcivi in media vivere Barbaria.

In the Afternoon, my Cloaths were brought me, of which I found they had ſtolen a good Part. The Linnen I had given to waſh, they brought me quite wet: And as they had ſeized, among my other Papers, my Laundreſs's Bill, I ſuppoſe that was laid, among the Reſt, before the Empreſs's Cabinet-Council. As for the Receipt for my Rent, which I had paid beforehand, and ſeveral other Things I had bought, they did not think fit to reſtore them, nor was ever any farther Mention made of them. In the mean time, I ſtill perſiſted in demanding an Interpreter, or that I might be carried before the Governour; but all Intreaties on this Head were fruitleſs. I then perceived I muſt prepare to return to *Peterſburg*, and conſequently undergo the Fatigue of a Journey of 5 or 600 Leagues: For this End, I was deſirous at leaſt to buy Neceſſaries to ſcreen me from the Cold; But no Body could or would underſtand me, and I was wholly ignorant what would be my Fate.

The next Day, a Man brought my printed Books, which he lock'd up in my Trunk, leaving only a *Ruſſian* Almanack, with a little Dictionary, in my Diſpoſal. They likewiſe allowed me ſome Shirts; but every Thing elſe was locked up and ſealed. About Four in the Afternoon, I was carried, by a Guard of a Serjeant and two Soldiers, to one of the Suburbs of the City, where I lay, that Night, in the Houſe of a Peaſant; And here it was that I began

to

to bully in earneſt. I had delivered my Sword, as I have obſerved above, to the City-Major, and it had been kept in my Priſon: When they carried me away, I bid the Serjeant take it with him: But the Officer of the Guard, who probably took a Liking to it, refuſed it, under Pretext, as far as I could underſtand, that the Major would ſend it after me. After having waited for it, ſome Time, in vain, I told the Serjeant I was reſolved not to go away without my Sword. I ſpoke to him of it, with ſuch an Air of Authority, that he, at length, thought fit to go for it, and brought it me in a Moment. Happily for me, the Woman of the Houſe where I was, had a Sheep-ſkin Pelt, quite new, which ſhe ſeemed very willing to part with, becauſe the Wool began to fall off. We ſoon agreed for the Price, and it was of great Service to me in the Sequel. During my Stay at *Twer*, I had likewiſe got a Cap made of a black *Fox*-ſkin Muff, which coſt me a great deal of Money, tho it was then of no Uſe to me. I yet keep theſe two Pieces of Fur, with the whole Furniture of my Captivity, hoping one Time or other to divert you with a Sight of them.

The next Day being appointed for my Departure, they put me into the worſt Sled they could find, and it was the firſt Time, in my Life, I had ever croſſed a River in a Sled. This River is called the *Caſana*, and was then ſo frozen as to bear great Burdens: But the Paſſage over the *Wolga* had like to have proved fatal to me. This River is very broad, at the Place where I was to go over it: I believe I ſpeak within Compaſs, if I ſay, it is at leaſt half a League broad. The Ice was pretty ſtrong, to ſome Diſtance from the Banks; but when we came farther, we met with large Pieces of floating Ice, driving with the Stream. In the Middle of the River, lay a Barque which waited

ſo

for me: But when we came within three or four hundred Paces of it, there was no other Way to get at it, but by jumping from one Flake of Ice to the other. I was, at firſt, terrified with the Danger, and thought it raſh to attempt this Paſſage: However, after ſome Reflections, I took Courage, and reſolved to run the Hazard of it. I was willing to ſet an Example to three *Muſcovites*, who were to follow me. There were ſeveral Perſons more, who deſigned to have gone over with us; but who, after having viewed the Danger they were like to expoſe themſelves to, wiſely reſolved to return.

There remained only two *Tartars* and a *Muſcovite* on the Banks. Seven or eight Men offered me their Aſſiſtance, with ſome Planks, to be made uſe of, in the moſt dangerous Places. But upon ſecond Thoughts, I believed it adviſeable to ſee firſt what Courſe the two *Tartars* would take, to overcome theſe Difficulties. I beheld them, tho not without laughing, leaping from one Piece of Ice to the other, and ſoon after getting into the Boat, without any Accident. Encouraged by their Example, I was not long in reſolving to follow them. Having pulled off my Cloak, I ordered two Men to walk before me, whom I followed Step for Step. I thought there was leſs Danger in tracing their Footſteps, than if I had taken any other Way. The Walk ſeemed pretty tedious to me; but, at length, I had the Pleaſure to take my laſt Leap, into the Barque. My two *Tartars* expreſſed their Joy, by Signs, to ſee me with them, and I no leſs rejoiced, at having eſcaped ſo great a Danger. Thoſe who followed me had, likewiſe, the good Fortune to get into the Barque to us.

The *Muſcovite*, more timorous than the reſt, would be the laſt, and was near being loſt. He

was not half way, when he ſunk down, between two Pieces of Ice, which, by good Fortune, proved ſtrong enough to bear him up by his two Arms. One of the Paſſengers, who happened to be near him, came to his Aſſiſtance, and helped him up, on the Ice again; when perceiving he was nearer the Shoar than the Bark, he choſe rather to go back, than to expoſe himſelf to new Perils. This Bark carried us over, tho with great Difficulty: For, every Moment, large Pieces of Ice came driving upon us, without any Poſſibility of avoiding them.

Being happily arrived, on the other Shoar, I ran towards ſome Houſes, which were not far off, to ſcreen my ſelf from a very piercing Cold, and a North-Wind, which blew hard. My Guards who were not yet recovered from the Fright, which ſo dangerous a Paſſage had put them into, and being beſides taken up with getting my Goods on Shoar, had forgot to keep an Eye upon me. In the mean Time, having found all the Houſes ſhut, I went into a little Church; where I heartily thanked GOD, for having delivered me from ſo apparent a Danger. I ſtaid there ſome Time, with no other Deſign, but to be ſcreen'd from the Cold. Our People, at length, having loſt Sight of me, were alarmed, and ran, with all their Might, directly towards the Houſes, not doubting but I was got into one of them. They were greatly ſurprized when they got thither, and I, who ſaw their Uneaſineſs, took a Pleaſure in leaving them in it. However, not to carry the Jeſt too far, I appeared again a Moment afterwards, and eaſed them of the Fears of my being eſcaped.

We took up our Lodging at a Houſe near the Place of our Landing, being reſolved to ſpend the Night there, to reſt from our great Fatigue. Tho our Journey, this Day, had been but ſhort, it

might

might be reckoned one of the moſt ſevere we had to undergo. Being come to our Quarters, I endeavoured to convince the Serjeant, who had Care of me, that he might be very eaſy on my Account, and I promiſed him to do nothing contrary to his Orders. He underſtood me, and taking me by the Hand, expreſſed a Satisfaction in my Behaviour. From this Time forwards, I was no longer a Priſoner, but my Guard became my Servants. After a light Supper, I laid my ſelf down to reſt. The Night was long, and I had Time enough to ſleep, and to think, at Leiſure, on my unhappy Fate. It may, perhaps, not be diſagreable to you to know what were my Reflections on this Occaſion.

They chiefly ran upon my Adventures. I firſt called to Mind all that *Peter*, the *Great*, had done, the Pains he had taken, and the Torrents of Blood he had ſhed, to extricate his Subjects, from that Barbarity and Ignorance into which they were plunged. I then reflected on his Voyages, Enquiries, Labours, and Eſtabliſhments; and I ſaid to myſelf; where are now the Effects of all the Pains this great Monarch took to reform his People? Is it poſſible that his Subjects ſhould be yet in the ſame State of Barbarity, they were in, long before his Reign? Where are then the Fruits of his Labour? I could not find that this Prince had changed the Genius of his Nation, and I had but too much Experience of the contrary.*

From theſe Thoughts, coming to the Uſage I had met with, the moſt injurious that could be imagined, I began to make other Reflections. The Government of *Caſan* (ſaid I) ought, for ſeveral

* *Peter* I. has been often heard to ſay, That he had made Men of Beaſts; but that after his Death, they would turn to Beaſts again; and the Author of theſe Letters ſeems to juſtify his Prophecy.

veral Reaſons, to be looked upon as one of the principal Employments conferred by the *Ruſſian* Court.† Conſequently the Perſon, who now enjoys it, ſhould be eſteemed one of the moſt worthy Subjects belonging to it. And yet this Man, who is ſtamped with ſuch a Character, behaves himſelf in the moſt unjuſtifiable Manner in the World. He has neither Chriſtianity, nor even any Principle of Humanity. He is the moſt vile and ungenerous of Men: In a Word, he is a very *Barbarian*. Has not he ſhewn himſelf to be the moſt abandoned of the human Species, with Regard to me? Where is the Juſtice of impriſoning a Foreigner, who, relying upon the Laws of Nations, travels under a feigned Name, and in whom there does not appear the leaſt Cauſe of Suſpicion? Is it a *Chriſtian* Uſage, to force a Man to travel in a Seaſon, in which a *Muſcovite*, who is the moſt inured to Hardſhip, is obliged to keep his Home? Ought not he to have enqnired, whether I was provided with Neceſſaries to reſiſt the Inclemencies of a hard Winter, in a Climat I was no Ways accuſtomed to? Was it not a Cruelty to abandon me in a Priſon, without ever informing, himſelf if I had where withal to ſubſiſt? He knew I was ignorant of the Language of the Country; I was not capable of asking for what I ſtood moſt in need of. Ought he not, by his Orders, to have prevented my being robbed of Part of what I had? In ſhort, Sir, would it not have excited your Compaſſion,

† The Kingdom of *Caſan* is one of the ten Governments, into which *Peter* I. parcel'd out his vaſt *Empire*. He firſt divided it into eight only, of which the Kingdoms of *Caſan* and *Aſtracan* together made one: But upon enlarging his Conqueſts otwards *Perſia*, theſe two Kingdoms were ſeparated, and made two Governments, which made them nine in all, and he afterwards divided the two into three, in Order to make ten Governments; in Veneration to the Number Ten; (as it is ſaid) that Number being held ſacred by the *Ruſſians*.

paſſion, to have ſeen me going over the *Wolga*? And if I had periſhed in that Paſſage, had not the Governour of *Caſan* been the Cauſe of my Death? I cannot but look upon this Event as the moſt dangerous I ever encountered with, during the whole Courſe of my Life.

But to go farther: To whom is it this Governour ſhews ſuch unworthy Treatment? Why, to a Man of Quality, one whom he himſelf has acknowledged to be ſo, and pitied him in his Misfortunes. A Perſon, who, with a ſincere and open Heart, throws himſelf into his Power, and entreats his Protection. That he might the better ſurprize and betray me, he begins, by giving me good Words, he aſſures me I have nothing to fear, and that he will procure me an Opportunity of purſuing my Journey, in all Safety. Weak, ungenerous Action! Tell me, I beſeech you, was there no other Way to ſecure me but by Treachery? In any other Country, a little more civiliz'd, a Governour of a Province would have behaved in a very different Manner. He would have ſaid; "Sir, I am ſorry I cannot grant you the Favour "you aſk, the preſent Juncture, and the poſitive "Orders I have from Court, oblige me indiſpen- "ſably to ſecure your Perſon: However, be aſ- "ſured, I will do every thing, that is in my "Power, to relieve you, and make your Captivity "eaſy." Had the Governour of *Caſan* treated me with ſuch Language, he would no leſs have executed the Orders of his Court, ſuppoſing he had any: And for me, far from having Reaſon of Complaint, I ſhould certainly have acknowledged his Favours: But this is not their Manner of Proceeding in *Muſcovy*. Their Way there is to ſeize a Perſon without any Cauſe, without any Examination, and, without even alledging the leaſt Pretext for it; they treat him immediately as a

State-

State-Criminal, he is guarded within View, and with Sword in Hand, he is refuſed the Uſe of his Knife and Fork, and his Equipage is rifled. Can a People, who behave in this Manner, be called civilized? And who then are *Barbarians*, if they are not ſo? Certainly, if I had fallen into the Hands of *Murſa*, the Chief of the *Tartars*, who dwells in *Caſan*, I ſhould never have met with ſuch Treatment: And yet theſe paſs for *Barbarians*, and no one has yet been at the Pains to undeceive the World in this Point. There is an enormous Difference between them and the *Muſcovites*; but it conſiſts in this, that they are not guilty of the Vices, the latter are ſo juſtly reproached with. The very Sight of the *Tartars* inclines one to believe all that Fame tells us of thoſe noble Enterprizes, by Means of which they extended their Conqueſts throughout all *Aſia*, and a Part of *Europe*. But at this Time, by the greateſt of all Misfortunes, ſeveral Branches of this valiant Nation are brought under the *Muſcovite* Yoke. I muſt confeſs, this ſurpaſſes my Underſtanding, and I am at a Loſs to comprehend it. It is true, the *Ruſſians* ſhew a great Regard for them, which is one Reaſon why they are ſo eaſy: But as they are not born to creep to ſuch Maſters, I hardly queſtion but they will, ſoon or late, ſhake off their Yoke.

You will judge, Sir, of the Length of the Night, by that of my Reflections: But, at length Day appears, and I muſt riſe to purſue my Way, to *Muſcow*, in a Seaſon, when the Ground is every where covered with Snow. We had a pretty good Journey, this Day, chiefly thro Woods and By-ways. I was obliged to lie all along in my Sled, to avoid the Branches of the Trees: But then I was almoſt buried in the Snow, which was every Moment falling upon me. We came, in

the

paſſion, to have ſeen me going over the *Wolga?* And if I had periſhed in that Paſſage, had not the Governour of *Caſan* been the Cauſe of my Death? I cannot but look upon this Event as the moſt dangerous I ever encountered with, during the whole Courſe of my Life.

But to go farther: To whom is it this Governour ſhews ſuch unworthy Treatment? Why, to a Man of Quality, one whom he himſelf has acknowledged to be ſo, and pitied him in his Misfortunes. A Perſon, who, with a ſincere and open Heart, throws himſelf into his Power, and entreats his Protection. That he might the better ſurprize and betray me, he begins, by giving me good Words, he aſſures me I have nothing to fear, and that he will procure me an Opportunity of purſuing my Journey, in all Safety. Weak, ungenerous Action! Tell me, I beſeech you, was there no other Way to ſecure me but by Treachery? In any other Country, a little more civiliz'd, a Governour of a Province would have behaved in a very different Manner. He would have ſaid; "Sir, I am ſorry I cannot grant you the Favour "you aſk, the preſent Juncture, and the poſitive "Orders I have from Court, oblige me indiſpen- "ſably to ſecure your Perſon: However, be aſ- "ſured, I will do every thing, that is in my "Power, to relieve you, and make your Captivity "eaſy." Had the Governour of *Caſan* treated me with ſuch Language, he would no leſs have executed the Orders of his Court, ſuppoſing he had any: And for me, far from having Reaſon of Complaint, I ſhould certainly have acknowledged his Favours: But this is not their Manner of Proceeding in *Muſcovy*. Their Way there is to ſeize a Perſon without any Cauſe, without any Examination, and, without even alledging the leaſt Pretext for it; they treat him immediately as a

State-

State-Criminal, he is guarded within View, and with Sword in Hand, he is refuſed the Uſe of his Knife and Fork, and his Equipage is rifled. Can a People, who behave in this Manner, be called civilized? And who then are *Barbarians*, if they are not ſo? Certainly, if I had fallen into the Hands of *Murſa*, the Chief of the *Tartars*, who dwells in *Caſan*, I ſhould never have met with ſuch Treatment: And yet theſe paſs for *Barbarians*, and no one has yet been at the Pains to undeceive the World in this Point. There is an enormous Difference between them and the *Muſcovites*; but it conſiſts in this, that they are not guilty of the Vices, the latter are ſo juſtly reproached with. The very Sight of the *Tartars* inclines one to believe all that Fame tells us of thoſe noble Enterprizes, by Means of which they extended their Conqueſts throughout all *Aſia*, and a Part of *Europe*. But at this Time, by the greateſt of all Misfortunes, ſeveral Branches of this valiant Nation are brought under the *Muſcovite* Yoke. I muſt confeſs, this ſurpaſſes my Underſtanding, and I am at a Loſs to comprehend it. It is true, the *Ruſſians* ſhew a great Regard for them, which is one Reaſon why they are ſo eaſy: But as they are not born to creep to ſuch Maſters, I hardly queſtion but they will, ſoon or late, ſhake off their Yoke.

You will judge, Sir, of the Length of the Night, by that of my Reflections: But, at length Day appears, and I muſt riſe to purſue my Way, to *Muſcow*, in a Seaſon, when the Ground is every where covered with Snow. We had a pretty good Journey, this Day, chiefly thro Woods and By-ways. I was obliged to lie all along in my Sled, to avoid the Branches of the Trees: But then I was almoſt buried in the Snow, which was every Moment falling upon me. We came, in

the

in the Evening, to a Village, the Houſes of which appeared to me very different from thoſe of the *Muſcovites*. Both Men and Women had other Habits, and their Language bore no Analogy to the *Ruſſian*. Upon Enquiry, I found I was among the *Scherimiſſian Tartars*, and I rejoiced at it. The Character I had heard of this Nation, and what I had obſerved myſelf of them, while at *Caſan*, gave me an advantageous Idea of them. I took great Delight in viewing their Houſes and Furniture, but more eſpecially the Dreſs of their Women, which is very ſingular.

While I was diverting myſelf in this Manner, I had the Diſſatisfaction, to ſee my Guard ſcuffling with my Landlady. Theſe Raſcals had their Views, in taking this Way, which is not the common Road. The moſt brutal among them began to abuſe the poor old Creature, for no other Crime but endeavouring to ſecure her own. I thought it my Duty to ſtand by this Woman: I therefore wreſted a large Pole out of the Hands of a Soldier, who had ſeized it, and, what with Signs and Words, had the good Fortune to appeaſe him. I found, however, that the poor *Scheremiſſi*, had been obliged to treat theſe Soldiers, and to furniſh them with whatever they asked. For my Part, I was contented with a ſmall Matter, conformable to the Bill of Fare I had preſcribed my ſelf for the whole Journey. It may be proper to inform you, that, in *Muſcovy*, there are no Houſes of Entertainment, where a Man may lodge and be boarded. In the Publick Houſes they have, they only ſell Beer and Brandy. Having therefore thrown down ſome Money on the Table, I made a Sign for them to get me ſome Eggs, They took but one Penny, for which they brought me thirty. I began to laugh at ſeeing ſo large a Number for ſo little Money. I picked out ſix of the freſheſt, and gave the reſt to my Landlady.

One

One of my greedy Guard would have laid hold on them; but I gave him to underſtand, by a Sign, that he was already well enough ſerved. My whole Supper conſiſted of theſe ſix Eggs, and a little Brandy mixed with Water. I might have had Beer, but it was ſo bad, there was no drinking it. This was all my Food from *Caſan* to *Muſcow*, and this Way of Living was ſo far from impairing my Health, that I was perfectly well, at my Arrival there. My Bedding was as mean as my Food; a Bench was the only Conveniency offer'd me, and all a Traveller has to expect throughout whole *Muſcovy*. I had happily provided my ſelf, before my Departure, with a good Mattraſs, which was of ſingular Uſe to me, as well now as afterwards.

We continued our Journey, the next Morning. My Guard, whoſe chief Views were Pillage, were for putting up at Noon: I plainly ſaw their Deſign; But did not know how to prevent it. However, conſidering how much this retarded my Journey, I took the Serjeant aſide, and endeavoured, by good Words, to convince him, that this Behaviour of his Men, might be the Occaſion of a Riot. My Admonition produced no great Effect; he alledged ſome poor Reaſons, in their Juſtification, which I was obliged to put up with. I had every Day the Mortification to ſee theſe Free-booters go from Houſe to Houſe, and pillage the poor *Tartars*, of what they pleaſed. I thought, nevertheleſs, it was my Buſineſs to proceed warily, in Caſe of any Tumult. I had Reaſon to be apprehenſive, that the enraged *Tartars* might attempt to maſſacre my Guard, together with their Priſoner. I therefore, concluded, that if any Diſturbance happened, the moſt prudent Meaſures I could take, would be to join with the ſtrongeſt Party. I never ſuffered my Sword, which was my only Defence, to be out of my Sight. To gain the

Affection of the *Tartars*, I never went into any Houſe, but I gave the Children Money; and as I had made a large Proviſion of white Bread, I was very free in diſtributing Pieces of it among them; for which I always had their Thanks. My Guard, tho very ſtupid, had Cunning enough to paſs by the larger Villages, that they might pillage with the leſs Danger.

This Behaviour of theirs gave Occaſion to many Reflections, which I made during my Journey. I could not forbear lamenting my Fate, to be put into the Hands of theſe Robbers. A thouſand Times I curſed the Governor for committing me to the Care of ſuch Wretches. When I obſerved what miſerable Diſcipline they were under, I ſaid to my ſelf:

Quid Domini facient, audent cum talia Servi!

It was a melancholy State I was reduced to, and I could not reflect upon it, without extream Concern. I found my ſelf obliged to traverſe a Country almoſt unknown, drawn upon a Board in the midſt of the Snow, dreſſed like a Savage, and deſtitute, in this Deſart, of wherewithal to eat or drink. The three Soldiers, who were my Companions, were Men without Manners or Humanity, nor could I ever have any Converſation with them. I ſometimes however diſpelled theſe gloomy Ideas with a *ſic erat in fatis.*

I muſt not omit informing you, that, in this Journey, I once quarrelled with my Sled-driver.

This ſmall Adventure will contribute not a little to give you a juſt Idea of the *Muſcovites*. The Raſcal, for he deſerves no better Name, took a Delight in giving every one of the poor *Scheremiſſi* he met, a good Laſh with his Whip. I thought, at firſt, it would ſuffice to let him know it diſpleaſed

pleaſed me, and that he would then leave it: But my Admonitions were in vain, and my Patience being, at length, quite ſpent, I gave him a Blow with my Fiſt, that beat him off the Sled. In his Juſtification, he pretended to convince me, that theſe People were no *Chriſtians*. Here had been a good Opportunity to read him a Leſſon of Morality: But then, on the one Hand, I muſt have known how to explain my ſelf to him, and, on the other, he muſt have been indued with ſome Principles of Religion; a Thing very rare among the *Muſcovites*.

But ſince I am ſpeaking of Religion, you muſt know, the *Muſcovites* think they alone have a Title to the Name of *Chriſtians*. They look upon all other People, the *Europeans* not excepted, to be Idolaters, who have no Knowledge of the true God. *Qualibus in tenebris vitæ*. Wretches that they are! They are not ſenſible of the profound Ignorance, in which they themſelves are immerged. What a ſtrange Worſhip is theirs! How imperfect their Faith! How looſe their Manners! I ſpeak more eſpecially of thoſe, who are in the higheſt Poſts, and who ought to ſet an Example to others. But to conclude my Reflections on this Head, ſuffer me only to enquire what their Monks are. This Species of Men, who ſwarm in every Province, are generally Drunkards, who live in a criminal Slothfulneſs, giving themſelves up to all Manner of Vices. Superſtition abounds no where more than in their Convents. Their Vows of Continence are a Crime, becauſe they never live up to them. They think of nothing but living at their Eaſe, without Labour or Care, and they immure themſelves within the Walls of their Convents only to eſcape Famine, or going to the Army. When I have frequently aſked to what End this Number of Sluggards, the Anſwer has always been, their Buſineſs is to pray to *God*.

This is the Character of the Monks, and of the whole Body of the Clergy in *Muſcovy*. If theſe Hypocrites, who pretend to Sanctity, had any Zeal for Religion, would they ſuffer idolatrous Nations as theſe *Scheremiſſi* are, who inhabit the very Center of the *Ruſſian* Empire, to live among them? It is true, the Clergy would be obliged to change their Manners, before they could pretend to preach the Goſpel, or they would run a great Hazard not to make a ſingle Convert. All theſe *Pagans* live in an honeſt Simplicity, and conformable to thoſe Laws which Nature has dictated to all Men. And certainly, they would be very little inclined to give Ear to Men, who lead a Life perfectly ſcandalous. I fear, Sir, you will think this Digreſſion tedious: But the Subject has carried me inſenſibly beyond the Bounds I had preſcribed my ſelf. I might ſay a great deal more on this Head,

Verum animo ſatis hæc veſtigia parva ſagaci.

Suppoſe me juſt arrived at a Village, called *Sabaczar*, which was formerly the Capital of the Province, where having bought ſome Proviſions, with a Covering for my Sled, and a Sack to put my Feet in, * I travelled afterwards with a little more Eaſe. The Perſons I employed to buy theſe Things, did not forget themſelves. Not ſatisfied with the Preſent I made them, they kept Part of the Money I put into their Hands. I accuſed them of the Theft, but I might as well have ſpoken to deaf Men: And beſides, it is not cuſtomary, in *Muſcovy*, to return Change.

It

* It is a Cuſtom, in theſe, and other Northern Parts, to travel with a large Sack lined with Furr, into which they put their Legs, and drawing it up, tie it about their Middles. It is of excellent Service to keep out the Cold, and for thoſe who cannot pay for theſe, a Sack filled with Bran has the ſame, or a better Effect.

It was ſome Comfort to me, under my Afflictions, that theſe People did me the Office of Servants; I was more their Superior and Maſter than their Priſoner. I had always the good Fortune, to keep up a Sort of Authority over my Guard, and all I had any Concern with, from the Beginning to the End of my Captivity. Upon ſome Occaſions I treated them harſhly, and at other Times, I was as gentle as a Lamb. Happy for me, that I began, in Time, to bring them under my Yoke; I might otherwiſe have been doubly their Slave. The *Muſcovites* are naturally very brutal, but at the ſame Time, timorous, and great Cowards, who, when they find any Reſiſtance, have not the Courage to go on. Cowards are generally treacherous: But to put it out of their Power, the beſt Way is to keep them under: * But to return to my Journey.

From *Sabaczar*, we went to *Niſninovogorod*, † and from thence to *Muſcow*, where we arrived the 23d of *November*. You will imagine, without Doubt, that at my Arrival in the Metropolis of ſo vaſt an Empire, the Face of Things muſt neceſſarily be changed, with Regard to me: That I met with another kind of Men, and eſpecially a Governour of better Underſtanding, and more juſt and human, than the Governour of *Caſan*; and conſequently, that I was ſoon diſcharged from my Confinement, or, at leaſt, treated in a Manner more becoming my Quality. If theſe be your Thoughts, Sir, you are greatly miſtaken. A *Muſcovite* is the ſame every where, and you will find them, at *Muſ-*

* In the laſt *Northern* War, after the Battle of *Gadebuſch*, when the *Muſcovites* were in *Holſtein*, the poor *Boors*, who had been harraſſed by the *Swedes* as Enemies, and by the *Muſcovites*, *Saxons*, and *Danes* as Friends, were wont to ſay, If they might have their Choice, they would deſire the *Swedes* as Enemies, rather than the *Muſcovites* as Friends.

† *Niſchnagorod*, I believe it ſhould be.

cow, juſt ſuch as you have ſeen them at *Caſan*. Imagine the Inhabitants of this great City, to be a new Colony of *Laplanders*, *Samojedes*, and *Oſtiacks*, who are accounted the moſt ſtupid Nations of the North, and then you may form, at leaſt, ſome Idea of the Character of the People, who dwell in this Capital. Do not, however, ſuppoſe this Parallel juſt in every Part of it. The *Muſcovites* are infinitely beneath all theſe other Nations: They are more barbarous, more irrational and leſs human. The Evidences I ſhall give you of this, in the Sequel, will put it beyond all Doubt. I could wiſh to do it now: But as it is Time to put an End to this Letter, which is already but too long,

Verbum non amplius addam.

LETTER III.

SIR,

THO the laſt Meſſenger brought me no Letter from you, I muſt not omit writing, as well to perform my Promiſe, as to ſatisfy your Curioſity. It is, beſides, a ſingular Pleaſure to me, that I am able now to pay a Debt, which I have contracted by a long Silence. Be aſſured, it is no ſmall Satisfaction to me, that I can converſe with you by Letter, 'till

——— Dextræ conjungere Dextram
Fas erit & notas audire ac reddere voces.

My laſt gave you an Account of my Arrival at *Muſcow*. I was firſt carried to the Houſe of a Baker, till the Serjeant and one of the Soldiers went to give an Account of my being there. The Soldier who was left, inſtead of following his Orders, to have a watchful Eye over me, laid himſelf down upon an Oven, and ſlept moſt profoundly. You muſt know, in *Muſcovy*, the Houſes of the meaner Sort of People, conſiſt generally of one large Room only, which ſerves them for Chamber, Kitchen, and every other Occaſion. In this Room you find an Oven, in which they bake their Bread, Meat, and almoſt all their Eatables, ſo that it is kept very hot all the Year round. The Top of it is covered with a great Number of Boards, which form a Sort of ſquare Scaffold; upon which the whole Family almoſt continually lives, as well in Summer as Winter. I have ſometimes happened to lay my Hand upon it, but found it ſo hot, that I was ſoon obliged to take it away. Some natural Philoſophers of your Acquaintance, who have made ſo many curious Experiments concerning *Salamanders*, did not perhaps know, that ſo peculiar a Species of them was to be found in *Muſcovy*. It is to be ſuppoſed, that if they had made this Diſcovery, they would have allowed thoſe Animals the Property given them, by the moſt early of the Ancients, of living in Fire. Pray aſſure thoſe Gentlemen, that the *Salamanders* in *Muſcovy*, not only paſs almoſt all their Time, but eat, ſleep and perform every Office of Life, in that Element.

Nothing would have been more eaſy, than for me to have eſcaped, while my *Salamander* was aſleep on the Oven; and could I have foreſeen what was to enſue, I aſſure you, I ſhould not have neglected the Opportunity. In a City ſo full of Strangers as *Muſcow* is, I might eaſily have been con-

cealed in the Crowd, and have freed my ſelf from the Purſuit of my Enemies: But I was ſo far from having the leaſt Thought of it, that I looked upon all that had happened to me till then, as a Farce, which would end with my Arrival at *Petersburg*. The firſt Scene which was opened at *Muſcow*, was humorous enough, but that which followed was as tragical: But you ſhall be judge of them.

As ſoon as the Serjeant returned, I was conveyed to *Cremelin* * the Reſidence of the *Czars*, I was not uneaſy that the firſt Scene was opened in a Place, where ſuch tragical Pieces have been repreſented. This Building conſiſts of ſeveral enormous Piles, heaped upon one another, without any Order. I was carried into a large Hall, which they call the Palace or Civil Court, but is one of the moſt filthy Places in the World. I there found a great Number of Clerks, buſied in diſpatching a Crowd of People, who were round about them. My coming in put an immediate ſtop to their Labour, and the Eyes of every one were turned upon me. As the *Muſcovites* are ſworn Enemies to the reſt of Mankind, the Sight of a Foreign Priſoner was a Diverſion to them, and the Hall was ſoon frequented in a more than ordinary Manner.

I was committed to the Care of an Officer, a Corporal and ſix old Soldiers. One of them ſtood always before me, with his Sword drawn, but he had not the moſt terrifying Countenance. At length, they brought ſome of my Goods, but I ſaw neither my Sword nor my Trunk. They ſhewed me

* *Kreml*, or *Cremmelin*, is the innermoſt of the four Towns or Parts, into which the City of *Muſcow* is divided, and incircle one another. It contains the Palace of the *Czars* of *Muſcovy*, an ancient Building, which is ſaid to contain 1687 Apartments, including Cellars and Magazines; as likewiſe the Cathedral, and five other Churches. It is not the Palace of the *Czars* alone, which is called *Cremmelin*, as ſome Writers ſuppoſe, but this whole Town or Diviſion, of which the Palace is but Part.

me one Corner of the Hall, which was deſtined for my Priſon: But I had no ſooner begun to prepare my Lodging, than a Perſon appeared at the Gate, to imform my Guard that I had a Pair of Sciſſars about me. They immediately ſet about to viſit a little Bag, into which I had put ſuch Things as were moſt neceſſary on my Journey, and upon my oppoſing them, they called the Officer, who told me he had Orders to viſit every Thing I had. I then opened the Bag my ſelf, and in a Moment they ſeized the Sciſſars, which they found there. I endeavoured to convince them, that I could not do without them, that I ſhould make no ill Uſe of them, and that they need not fear my making my ſelf an Eunuch with them. None of theſe Arguments had any Effect, ſo I was obliged to give way to Force. By good Fortune, I had another Pair of Sciſſars which eſcaped their Notice. I had, likewiſe, a large Fork, which, upon Occaſion, would have done the Service of a Dagger; for the leaſt terrifying Weapons are more than ſufficient to affright a *Muſcovite*.

So excellent a Beginning gave me Room to judge what I had to expect in the Sequel; I, therefore, endeavoured to make my ſelf eaſy under the State I was in. My greateſt Mortification was to ſee my ſelf expoſed as a Sight to Crowds of People, who were continually flocking into the Hall. I ſhould have been very glad of an Interpreter; but all the Application I made for that End was in vain, nor could I, with all my Entreaties, prevail upon them to let me have a Barber. Dinner-Time approaching, I made Signs for ſomething to eat, and was anſwered, in the ſame Manner, that I muſt open my Purſe. After long waiting, and ſeeing nothing appear, I was obliged to be content with a Morſel of Bread, and ſome Scraps which I had yet left in my Hamper. While I was at Dinner,

ner, they aſked me for the Key of my Trunk, which they had not thought fit to entruſt to my Care. I thought it ſomething ſtrange, that they ſhould ranſack my Trunk out of my Sight; however, I gave them the Key, tho with Reluctance. At Supper-Time, I was obliged to have Recourſe to my Pocket, and upon this Occaſion I found, that Stewards at *Muſcow*, are greater Thieves than thoſe of *Caſan*. You will not need to ask me what Sort of a Bed I had, I believe, I have already told you, that they lye on Benches, in *Muſcovy*. I was ſo happy to have Sheets, and Coverlets, of my own, which did me good Service: But what a Surprize appeared in my Guard, when they ſaw me making my Bed! They could not conceive what I was going to do with thoſe Bed-Cloaths.

You ſee, Sir, I keep my Word with you: It was your Command, that I ſhould inform you of the moſt minute Circumſtances, and you have no Cauſe to complain on that Score. Since then you have a a Taſte that Way, you ſhall know ſome Particulars of what happened the next Day. I was diſturbed, very early, at my Toilet, by the ſame Troop of Clerks, I mentioned above, and a great Number of other People, whom Curioſity or Buſineſs had drawn together, in the Hall. I continued expoſed as a Sight to theſe Crowds, who could not forbear fixing their Eyes upon me. At Length, I began to think of making Advantage of this Concourſe of People. When I ſaw any one come in, who had a good Appearance, or who ſeemed to be an Officer or Foreigner, I immediately accoſted him, ſpeaking in *Italian*, *French* or *Latin*: But it was all in vain, I did not find one who could underſtand me. My Guard, in the mean Time, offended at the Freedom I took, pretended to impoſe Silence upon me; but I gave them to underſtand, by Signs, that they muſt cut out my Tongue, if they would debar me

the

the Uſe of it. Two *Poles* coming in, I addreſſed my ſelf to them in *Latin*, and they began to anſwer me, but their Mouths were ſoon ſtopped. Their Silence did not, however, hinder me from asking them, if it was cuſtomary, in *Muſcovy*, to treat Priſoners as the moſt abject Slaves? If it was uſual to let them periſh for Hunger, by denying them an Interpreter? And, finally, if, ſince *Peter* the *Great*, had obliged the *Muſcovites* * to cut off their Beards, there was no ſuch Thing as a Barber eſtabliſhed in that City?

While I was diſcourſing with theſe *Poles*, the Man who had been ſo anctious about my Sciſſars, came in, and made me a Sign to follow him. Being perſuaded that he was to carry me before the Governour, I readily obeyed; for I longed for nothing more, being in Hopes he might underſtand ſome of the Languages I knew. I was carried into an Apartment, not far from the Hall, where I found one ſingle Man only; but ſoon after came in another, with ſome Papers in his Hands. This latter paſſed by me without ſaluting, or ſo much as looking on me, and ſate down near a Table, towards which I likewiſe advanced. The Perſon I ſaw firſt did the ſame, and having asked me if I ſpoke *Italian*, I anſwered him, it was natural for me to ſpeak my Mother Tongue. He then, after having received the Inſtructions of the Perſon who was ſitting, asked me, who I was? But before I anſwered him, I was inquiſitive, in my Turn, who it was that was examining me? I was told he was a Secretary, I was not a little ſurprized to ſee a Secretary examining me ſitting, while I was ſtanding; but being apprehenſive I might be ſent back from whence

* *Peter* I. obliged all his Subjects, by an Edict, to cut off their Beards, and to wear ſhort Cloathing, which Edict was the Occaſion of a Rebellion, in 1704. in the Kingdom of *Aſtracan*, and the adjacent Countries.

whence I came, I told him my Name, which he wrote down. He asked me ſeveral other frivolous Queſtions, by which I found my Examination was not like to be ſhort. I, therefore, took the Reſolution to tell him, that if he expected any farther Anſwer from me, he muſt order me a Chair. He lifted up his Head, in a great Surprize, and looking me in the Face, continued his Interrogations. All the Anſwer I gave was, that I would not ſpeak ſtanding. He ſeemed terribly perplexed, and I found he had not been accuſtomed to ſuch Replies; he was obliged, however, to give Way to them. Being ſeated, I was forced to give Anſwer to a Number of the moſt impertinent Queſtions in the World: And what was particular, there were, beſides the Soldier who guarded me, Sword in Hand, twenty other Perſons in the Room: A peculiar Manner of examining Priſoners of State. As ſoon as the Secretary let me know, I might retire, I bid the Interpreter tell him, I deſired to ſpeak with the Governour, and that I expected to be treated as Perſons of Quality are treated throughout all *Europe*. All the Anſwer he vouchſafed me was, that he did not know whether I was ſo or not. Enraged to the utmoſt at this Anſwer, I told him he had very little Skill in Phyſiognomy; and I would gladly have added, that having a better Knowledge of Men than he, I could foretel him that the Gallows would ſoon be his Fate. He had indeed a very hanging Look, and my Prophecy would hardly have been miſplaced. I leave you to judge, whether he did not deſerve, at leaſt, that Fate, by his Carriage to me.

The next Day, I was again obliged to appear before Mr. Secretary; who took Care to put it out of my Power, to inſiſt upon being ſeated, by ordering all the Chairs to be conveyed out of the Room. This was ſo far from exciting my Anger, that it put me into a good Humour; and I was very near imitating

imitating the Perſon, who for want of a Chair, ſate down upon his Cloak. I no ſooner came into the Room, than the Interpreter read a Paper to me, containing the Examination of the foregoing Day, and I was directed to ſign it. I anſwered I would never ſet my Hand to a Writing, in a Language I did not underſtand. The Reply was, it is the Cuſtom of the Country; if it be ſo, ſaid I, it is a very ſcandalous one; and, indeed, ſuppoſing I had been as criminal as they pretended, it would have been contrary to all Law, to condemn me on ſuch an Evidence. The Secretary inſiſted upon my ſigning it, I oppoſed it for ſome Time, alledging ſuch Reaſons as might have convinced him of his Ignorance, and how little I valued theſe Proceedings: However, at length, ſeeing no other Way to get out of his Clutches, I conſented. I asked him, if he had let the Governour know I deſired to be admitted to his Preſence; he ſaid he had. I likewiſe deſired him, if I was to be detained any Time at *Muſcow*, that he would endeavour to procure me another Priſon, that in which I was, being very unbeſeeming a Priſoner of State; he ſaid he would ſpeak about it. To conclude, at leaving him, I let him know, I ſhould be very glad to have a Barber; to which he replied, it was Time enough for that; an Anſwer worthy of a Secretary of *Muſcovy*, in Return for which, I ought to have ſpit in his Face. The *Muſcovites* are ſtill ſo enraged, that *Peter* the *Great*, obliged them to cut off their Beards, that not daring to have them themſelves, they will oblige Strangers to let theirs grow. It is, likewiſe, a Cuſtom, that as ſoon as a Man is accuſed of any Crime, he does not touch his Beard afterwards, but affects a ſuppliant Air, to excite Compaſſion in his Judges. Perhaps theſe Gentlemen thought to make me conform to this Cuſtom, and in one Reſpect thay had there Will, becauſe I never could get a Barber:

Barber: But they did not gain ſo much over me, to make me appear before them as a Suppliant.

I expected I ſhould have been ſent away, that Day, or the next, for *Peterſburg*; but they are rarely ſo expeditious, in *Muſcovy*. They let me paſs the Remainder of the Day, very peaceably, without offering me any Thing to eat. I was obliged to provide at my own Expence, and to ſee my ſelf robbed, with Impunity, by thoſe whoſe Care it was to buy my Proviſions. I believe, I have told you already, Sir, that the *Muſcovites* are very great Thieves: But I had almoſt forgot to let you know, that, at my Meals, I was forced to be contented with two Spoons, inſtead of a Knife and Fork. This manner of treating Priſoners in *Muſcovy*, gave me often an Opportunity of jeſting with the Soldiers, and thoſe who were about me, tho I underſtood very little of their Language.

The Governour did not deſire to ſee me till the 27th, and then more out of Curioſity, than any other Motive. When I was introduced to him, he was ſitting with two others, at a great Table, with his Back to the Door, I came in at: And, when I drew near him, he continued ſtill in the ſame Poſture, being contented with turning his Head, and looking at me over his Shoulder. He immediately ordered the *Italian* Interpreter, who was preſent, to aſk me ſeveral Queſtions. As for his two Companions, I could not perceive they ſo much as moved, or once turned their Eyes towards me. Having anſwered the Governour's Queſtions, I bid the Interpreter tell him, I could hardly believe it was with his Knowledge, I was treated in a Manner ſo little becoming my Quality; that I begged of him he would allot me another Priſon, for that I could have no Reſt where I was, and beſides, was expoſed to be the Scoff of the whole Town. Upon which he ſpoke to the Secretary, but I could not underſtand

any

any thing he ſaid. To diſmiſs me, he at length gave me a gracious Nod; * But as I did not ſeem to underſtand theſe apiſh Tricks, he was conſtrained, at length, to tell me, by the Mouth of the Interpreter, that I muſt retire. And thus ended this formal Appearance, which I was forced to make before the Governour of the Great City of *Muſcow*. I do not doubt but you have ſeen the Play called *Arlichin finto Prencipe*. Imagine, you ſee me received much with the ſame Grimaces, as *Harlequin* receives his People with, and that the Diſcourſe which paſſed was not much unlike that of the Illuſtrious Buffoon, I have juſt mentioned. The Farce which followed, did not in the leaſt deviate from the Abſurdity of that which preceeded it. But I muſt give you a Skitch of it.

The ſame Evening, they carried me to another Priſon; which was a Piece of antient Ruins, that ſerved as a Shelter for thoſe People whoſe Buſineſs it was to break the Ice, and to cleanſe the Streets from Snow and Dirt. In this Priſon was a little Room, which was allotted for me, my Guard of 6 or 7 Soldiers, and 3 or 4 Duſt (or rather Dirt) men, who had already taken Poſſeſſion. This Change, which I was to take as a Favour too, ſurprized me ſtrangely; but my Wonder ſoon ceaſed, when I was informed, that Signor *Harlequin* himſelf had ordered it. I placed my ſelf as conveniently as I could, in a Corner, where, during the whole Time I was forced to ſtay there, I was almoſt ſuffocated with Smoke and Heat. While I was in this Dungeon, a little Adventure happened to me, which may make you laugh. One Day, not knowing how to employ my Time, it came into my Head to clean my Teeth: But as I had neglected it a long while, I could

* It is plain, our Author had not traveled much among the *Northern* Grandees, who are ſo uſed to treat their Vaſſals in this Manner, that they are very apt to forget themſelves, and treat others, and ſometimes their Equals, with this familiar Nods. And that not in *Muſcovy* only.

could not do it without making my Gums bleed. My Guard, the moſt ſtupid of Human Species, were very attentive to what I was doing, but, could not tell what to think of the Operation. After having frequently aſked one another what it meant, they, at length, ventured to draw nearer, and examine the Inſtruments I made uſe of. As I had ſome Steel-Pens, which probably they took for Launcets, and they ſaw Blood, they endeavoured to hinder me. I laughed at their Stupidity, but I was forced to make a great many Signs, before I could prevail on them to let me go on. One Scene more, and then I ſhall ſhift the Decorations: But, unhappily for me, I ſhall be obliged *induere Cothurnum*.

The 30th, which, if I miſtake not, is the Feaſt of St. *Andrew*; I had a Viſit again from my Sciſſars Merchant, in Company with another Perſon. They made a long Speech, in which I heard the Names of the Empreſs and the Governour mentioned: But all that I could comprehend of it was, that they came to make me a Preſent; however, he who was Chief in the Commiſſion, held it ſo cloſe in his Hand, and kept at ſuch a Diſtance, that it was impoſſible for me to diſtinguiſh what it conſiſted of. At length drawing nearer towards him, I ſuddenly ſeized his Hand, and found a ſingle Ruble in it. Far from vouchſafing to accept of ſuch a Preſent, I only thanked them, and ſaid I never received Money of any body. One of my Guards ſurprized to ſee me refuſe ſo conſiderable a Preſent, drew near, and puſhing me pretty roughly, cried, *Take it, Take it, Fool that thou art.* They preſſed me, to accept of it, but finding me obſtinate in my Refuſal, they walked off with their Preſent.

Could you ever have imagined I ſhould be reduced to the Condition of having a Crown offered me? And do you think it poſſible ſuch a Preſent

ſhould

ſhould be made, to a Perſon of my Birth, in the Name of the Empreſs of *Ruſſia*. It would be ridiculous to believe this Offer was made me by Order from Her Majeſty, and if it came from the Governour, I leave you to judge of his Character.

The 2d of *December*, two Hours before Day, they came to tell me, I muſt riſe, and depart immediately. It was to no Purpoſe to conſider; they put me inſtantly into a Sled, without giving me Time to recollect, without any Regard to the Rigour of the Seaſon, and without allowing me to make neceſſary Proviſion for ſuch a Journey. I was guarded by three Raſcals, one of whom called himſelf a Sergeant, and the other two Soldiers, tho they had neither the Habit, nor Arms, nor any Thing elſe, to diſtinguiſh them as ſuch. Before I went out, I asked for my Sword, which had diſappeared, and was told, it was locked up in my Trunk. Do not forget, I beſeech you, this Circumſtance; Becauſe it has ſome Relation to that of the Key of this ſame Trunk, of which I ſhall have Occaſion to ſpeak hereafter.

As we ſtopped in the *Slaboda*,* I took Care to furniſh my ſelf there, with what was neceſſary, that I ſhould not have found elſewhere. While I was thus employed, one of my Soldiers, who was upon Duty, with a great Scimitar in his Hand, had the Aſſurance to inſult, and talk ſaucily to me. To puniſh him for his Inſolence, I immediately wreſted a Stick out of the Hands of the Corporal, and offered to ſtrike him. This Shew of chaſtizing him was ſufficient to make him retreat ten Paces from me, and this Coward was afterwards the moſt humble, and the moſt ſubmiſſive of my Guard. The Brutality of the *Muſcovites* ought always to be reproved

* There are two large *Slabodas* or Suburbs without the Mud-Wall which encloſes all the four Towns or Diviſions, that together make the whole City of *Muſcow*. One of theſe is called the *German*, the other the *Strelitz Slaboda*.

in this Manner. Shew your Teeth to these Cowardly Wretches, and you soon have them creeping at your Feet.

When I left *Muscow*, I was in perfect Health; But, two Days after, I was seized with a Distemper, which I thought would have laid me in the Grave. It was a Sort of a Cholick in the Stomach, attended with intolerable Pain, convulsive Motions, and a continual Propensity to vomit. You may judge in what a melancholy State I was then in, obliged to travel in a Sled, in the Depth of Winter, and destitute of all Relief. The first Stage we came at, I had immediate Recourse to some Remedies I carried with me. I had *Venice-Treacle*, some *Eaudes Carmes*, and a certain Balsam, which is accounted an excellent Remedy, and is distributed by the Monks of St. *Justin*, to their Friends. All these Remedies I applied in a Moment, without the least Success: My Distemper continued, with an astonishing Violence, and without the least Intermission, From my Stomach, the Pains descended into my Bowels, my Convulsions became more violent, and my Retchings to vomit increased every Moment. In this sad Extremity, instead of being quite dispirited, I thought it expedient to double the Dose of my Medicines, but still without receiving the least Benefit by them. After having suffered inexpressible Torments, for 6 or 7 Hours together, I was seized with the most burning Thirst, which obliged me to drink a prodigious Quantity of Water. My Pain continued with the same Violence, I had only a small Evacuation downwards.

The miserable Condition I was in, did not hinder my Guard from proposing to depart. I was forced to submit to my Destiny, and throw my self into the Arms of Providence. As I was devoured with Thirst, I took several Bottles of Water before my Departure. I was often obliged to stop by the

Way

Way to eaſe Nature, and I always obſerved that my Stools were of divers Colours, and that I voided Blood. To compleat the Misfortune, we had like all to have periſhed, in the moſt melancholy manner in the World. One Night, when we were croſſing the River *Wolkowa*, I ſuddenly heard a loud Voice repeating three Times, *Keep back:* Upon Enquiry what was the Matter, we found, that two Sleds, and 8 Horſes, laden with Money, were juſt fallen in, at the very Place where we were. The Sled, in which my Goods were, run a great Hazard, being the foremoſt of our Train; but fortunately we had all Time to retreat, and afterwards took another Way.

But to return to my Illneſs; give me leave to make ſome Conjectures on that Head, which to me ſeem but too well grounded, of which, however, I leave you to be the ſole Judge. My intent is to mark out to you the real Cauſe of ſo fatal a Diſtemper; and I firmly believe it to have been the Effect of Poiſon given me. I ſhall give you my Reaſons for it, in the Sequel, in the mean Time, I deſire you to give ſome Attention to the following Reflections. Before my Illneſs, I was of a hail robuſt Conſtitution, and at my Departure from *Muſcovo*, I was in a State of perfect Health. I did not know that I ever eat or drunk any Thing, that could be the Cauſe of ſuch Symptoms: Nor is there any more Probability, that any Species of Poiſon ſhould have accidentally been mixed with my Food. I cannot therefore, be perſuaded, but that my Guard, out of an execrable Deſign, themſelves endeavoured to take away my Life by Poiſon.

In the Night between the 14th and 15th I arrived, in a very piteous Condition, at a large Suburb, about a Quarter of a League's Diſtance from *Peterſburg*. The Houſe where we took our Quarters had neither Eggs, nor any Thing elſe to eat, ſo I was

obliged to put up with a Piece of brown Bread, which I found upon the Table. I paſſed the whole Night under great Uneaſineſs, and without any Reſt, my Diſtemper obliging me to get up every Moment.

Thus ended my painful Journey from *Muſcow* to *Peterſburg*; where I hope to find all the Aſſiſtance I ſtand in need of, and, in a ſhort Time, to ſee all my Misfortunes at an End. Theſe Hopes are ſo powerful, that methinks I am already, in ſome Meaſure, eaſed of my Pain. What is your Opinion of it, Sir, do you believe I ſhall find my ſelf miſtaken? I muſt confeſs, I do not eſteem *Peterſburg*, as a City of *Muſcovy*: I look upon this Capital as the Reſidence of one of the moſt mighty Monarchs in the whole World, crouded with Foreigners, the greater Part of whom have the Direction of the moſt important Affairs. I expect ſpeedily to be lodged in a Palace, which is oppoſite to that of the Sovereign, and in which the wiſeſt Miniſters aſſemble. I flatter my ſelf with the Hopes of being treated there in ſuch a Manner, that I ſhall entirely loſe the Remembrance of what is paſt. Depend on it, Sir, I ſhall not delay giving you an Account of every Thing, being perſuaded that you will expect it with the utmoſt Impatience;

Nam tibi ſollicito nova res mollitur ad aures
Accidere, et nova ſe ſpecies oſtendere rerum.

LETTER IV.

SIR,

I Cannot but acknowledge, with the utmoſt Gratitude, the many Obligations you lay me under. By your laſt, I perceive, that your Friendſhip to me encreaſes daily; that you bemoan my Abſence; that you are ſenſibly affected with what ever befals me; and, in fine, that you pity my Misfortunes, which you wiſh to ſee ſpeedily ended. Theſe lively Tokens of a Friendſhip the moſt ſincere, without Doubt merit a Retaliation from my Hands. Be aſſured then, that you are to me the deareſt Perſon living, and that nothing can afford me ſo much Comfort, in my preſent unhappy State, as the Hopes of embracing, ſoon or late, ſo valuable a Friend. You are pleaſed to obſerve, that neither my Impriſonment, nor my Sufferings, have made me forget the *Latin* Tongue, and that you take a Pleaſure in the Peruſal of thoſe Verſes, which I ſometimes quote in that Language. As you ſeem, Sir, to reliſh this Way of Writing, I will not, in the Sequel, fail to give you that Satisfaction: And am only ſorry, that I have not a Library at Command, for then I ſhould find it more eaſy to ſend you elegant *Latin*, than bad *French*. In the mean Time, as I am loſt to all Ambition, ſo neither am I in a Humour, to give my ſelf the leaſt Trouble either for the one or the other; if therefore my Letters are written in a cold, flagging Stile, you may freely ſay,

Didicit jam bona verba loqui.

and if the Expreſſions are low, and the Diction incorrect, I muſt plead, as an Excuſe, that I'm a Stranger to the Language I write in. As you ſeem fond of *Latin*, I muſt beg Leave to tell you, that

De qua ſcribebam barbara terra fuit.

I ſhall begin my Account of this Country by telling you, that we made our Entry into *Peterſburg* on the 15th of *December*, 1733. A Thaw had made the Roads, at that Time, very deep, and, when we reached the River, which we were to paſs, we were obliged to halt, no one being ſuffered to croſs it: Guards were even placed at all the moſt frequented Paſſes, to obſtruct the Paſſage of Drunkards, which Appellation is generally due to half, and ſometimes to the whole City. After a ſtay of two Hours, without knowing what my Fate would be, I was ordered to paſs the River, and my Guard ſhewed me on the oppoſite Side a Houſe, called the Senate-Houſe, whither I was to go. I was really aſhamed of the Condition I found my ſelf in, when I ſtepped out of my Sled, and leave you to judge what a Figure I muſt have made after what I had undergone. My Paſſage over this River, ſeemed in Compariſon with the Trial I had undergone in croſſing the *Wolga*, only a pleaſant Step, through the Gravel-Walks of a Garden, or on an Arched Roof. I was no ſooner landed on the oppoſite Banks, than the Soldiers, who were poſted there, to ſtop up the Paſſes, preſented their Bayonets, and enjoined me to return from whence I came. But upon the preſſing Inſtances of the Sergeant, who had accompanied me, I was at laſt permitted to paſs.

They conducted me immediately to the Hall of the Senate-Houſe, which was crowded with Perſons of all Ranks. After having waited ſome Time there,

there, I was led to another little Apartment, where I could hardly ſtand upright, and informed by Signs that I muſt take up my Habitation there. At the Remonſtrance of the Soldiers, who were on Guard, I was however directed to a Chamber, where I found a Score of Clerks, five or ſix Soldiers, and Crowds of other People. No ſooner had I entered this Room, than an Officer pointed to a Corner, and ſaid to me, *There's thy Lodging*. The manner with which he uttered theſe Words, ſhewed he had a ſecret Pleaſure in having an impriſoned Foreigner in his Cuſtody. He asked, whether I had any Money, for, if I had none, I ſhould be ſupplyed with Beer and Bread. If you was in my Caſe, thought I with my ſelf, you would fare very hard.

Being left to the Cuſtody of a Soldier, who guarded me, Sword in Hand, I lay down on my Mattreſs, to take a little Reſt. I was ſo overwhelmed with Grief, that I was hardly capable of reflecting on the Situation I was in. Some Slaves brought, at the ſame Time, my Goods, all but my Trunk, and whatever elſe they thought proper to rob me of. At noon, every one retired, and I was left only with my Guard, who were of the Regiment of *Aſtracan*. Soon after came in the Sergeant, who gave ſome Orders to my Guard, and I perceived I was to be under his Inſpection. I let him know I wanted ſomebody I could ſpeak to, having Occaſion to buy ſome Victuals. He promiſed to grant my Requeſt the next Morning. But as I found, that the People of this Country ſeemed unacquainted with the Proverb, *Venter non patitur dilationem*, I gave Money to one of the Soldiers to fetch me Bread and Wine, which he did. Having ſome Sugar, I made a Toaſt, and ſweetned the Wine, which had been my greateſt Relief during the whole Journey.

At Day-Break, the next Morning, my Apartment was again crowded with Clerks and other Peo-

ple. The little Corner, where I was ſtreightned for want of Room, was the Anti-Chamber of a Secretary, who came in, and, having fixed his Eyes on me, in an inſolent Manner, paſſed by without ſaluting me. He went into his Office, and returned inſtantly, to order an Officer of the Guards, then preſent, not to ſuffer me to be at the Window, or to go into the Secretary's Office. He kept his Hat on whilſt he gave theſe Orders to the Officer, to whom he ſpoke with an Air of Superiority that ſurprized me. This Carriage occaſioned me to think, that the Gentlemen, who are at the Head of the *Muſcovite* Troops, are probably ignorant, how they expoſe the Honour of their Regiments by ſubjecting them to the Injunctions of ſuch Wretches.

I waited, in the mean Time, with great Impatience for the Interpreter, they had promiſed me. I acquainted the Sergeant, who came to ſee me, with my Deſire, and he aſſured me, that he would immediately ſend me one. I met with the ſame Anſwer to my Demand for a Barber. But, notwithſtanding theſe repeated Aſſurances, I ſaw neither one nor t'other. The Door of an adjoining Apartment being open, and no one there, my Curioſity induced me to go in, but I was ordered to retire, and I was obliged to obey. I met with the ſame Order, when I approached a Window, but having little Regard to ſuch Impertinences, I gave them to underſtand, that, if they would hinder me from looking out at the Windows, they muſt wall them up. This Anſwer put a Stop to all further Uneaſineſs on that Head. I paſſed the Night quietly enough, but, when I waked, found myſelf benum'd from Head to Foot, and not able to ſtir for ſome Time. This Accident revived the Suſpicion, I entertained before, of being poiſoned: Which myſterious Scene of Iniquity, I ſhall explain to you more at large, in the Sequel: at preſent I muſt inform you of what paſſed at my Levee.

I

I was hardly up, when the Sergeant came into my Chamber, and desired me to prepare for going out. I was very soon ready, and met, at the Bottom of the Stairs, a Secretary, who made Signs to me, to follow him: This Officer was to conduct me to the Empress's Palace, situate on the other Side of the River. Notwithstanding that the Ice appeared to me very strong, yet few were willing to pass over it: But a large Number of Planks were laid upon it which rendered the Passage entirely safe. When I came to the Palace, I was carried into an Anti-Chamber crowded with People. A Looking-Glass, which was in that Apartment, gave me an Opportunity of seeing what a Figure I made: But I was highly mortified to find my self so nearly resembling a Savage. Another Object, which, at the same Time, offered itself to my View, soon dispelled this little Uneasiness. I saw, the Sergeant, who had guarded me from *Moscow* to *Petersburg*, in a much worse Condition than my self. One would have thought this poor Wretch just come from the Rack. I beg, Sir, you would not forget this Circumstance, which I shall have Occasion to remind you of in the Sequel.

Whilst my Mind was employed in forming Conjectures about what might have happened to my Sergeant, I was sent for to a small Apartment, where I saw two Lords sitting at a Table, and at some Distance another Person likewise sitting, on a low Stool. The former were the two Prime-Ministers of her *Czarian* Majesty; the one a Foreigner, and the other a *Muscovite*; and the third, who sat at some Distance, was the Attorney-General. I drew near to the Table as well as my Legs would let me; for they were scarce in a Condition to obey my Orders; *Sed vires animus dabat.* The Foreign Minister, who is a Man of a noble Appearance, broke Silence, and asked me in *French*,

who

who I was. I acquainted him with my Name, and told him, at the ſame Time, how much I was aſhamed to appear before him in ſo mean a Condition. He then asked ſome other inſignificant Queſtions, to which I anſwered as well as I could. An Abſtract of theſe Interrogations, you will find in a Memorial, which I ſhall take Care to ſend you.

The *Muſcovite* Miniſter kept a profound Silence during the Converſation, I had with the other, and did not ſo much as lift up his Eyes. He is a Man of an enormous Size, and wore a Peruke with a Bag, as remarkably ſmall. The comical Figure, this diminutive Peruke made on the Head of ſo big a Man, was ſuch, that on any other Occaſion I ſhould unavoidibly have burſt out into Laughter, and might juſtly have applyed to him theſe Words, *Atque ſupercilio brevior comæ*. As for the Attorney-General, his Function ſeemed to be no other, than that of hearing what was ſaid. The Prime-Miniſter continued, in the mean Time, to examine me, and enquired into the Motives, that induced me to leave *France*. I anſwered that it was to avoid a Marriage, which I ſhould have been obliged to contract, had I made any longer Stay in that Country. To this he anſwered, that I muſt ſurely be more ſcrupulous than People generally are in *France*, adding, theſe very Words: *Sir, you might have married the Perſon, you ſpeak of, and need not have been deſtitute of Means to rid your ſelf of her afterwards.* Notwithſtanding my extream Weakneſs, at theſe Words, I retreated a Step or two backwards, *& hic vires indignatio dedit*. He recollected himſelf, when he ſaw the Surprize I was in, and endeavoured to explain his Meaning. He told me, that I might have been divorced from this Wife in a legal Way, very common, eſpecially in *France*, and added ſeveral other Circumſtances, all tending to illuſtrate what he had before ſaid. I ſhould be glad to know whether

ther he would have adviſed me to hang my ſelf, in hopes of ſomebody's coming to cut me down?

After he had made ſome farther Enquiry into my Affairs, to which I replyed in few Words, I was ordered to go out, and wait in the Anti-Chamber. As, in my Examination, I had mentioned the Son of Count *de Munich*, who I thought might know me, having ſeen me in foreign Countries, it was thought proper to ſend for him, and, when he came, he was placed behind a Door, through which he took a View of me. A very neceſſary Caution certainly! What Harm would it have been, if they had let him come nearer, that he might have ſeen and ſpoken to me? It would have been much more eaſy to him to have known me, in the Condition I was then in, by my Voice, than by my doleful Aſpect. My Beard was, at that Time, of two Months Growth, I had a Peruke on, combed in the *Turkiſh* Faſhion, and a very ragged Cloak. Count *de Munich*'s Son had to be ſure never ſeen me in ſuch an Equipage, and conſequently could not be ſuppoſed to know me. After they had got what Information they thought neceſſary, the ſame Miniſter, who had all along diſcourſed with me, drew nearer, and asked the Name of the Perſon, who had been the Cauſe of all my Misfortunes. This Queſtion highly ſurprized me, and I wonder I had not anſwered, *Et oſi di viltà tentare Argante?* I was, however, contented with replying, with a diſdainful Smile, that I could not believe he expected I ſhould anſwer him. That he could not be ignorant of the Reſpect due to the Sex, though they often might not deſerve it. I thought proper, before I retired, to beg he would take Notice of my infirm State of Health, after ſo tedious a Sickneſs, and of the ſtrange Uſage I had met with from the firſt Day of my Impriſonment. He gave me no other Anſwer, than this: *It is your own Fault, Sir, we ſhall proceed as favourably as we can.*

Reflect,

Reflect, I beſeech you, on this whole Procedure. But in order to inform you rightly of the State of Things, it will be neceſſary to acquaint you with what I could learn of the *Muſcovite* Miniſtry. It is certain, that all the grand Affairs tranſacted at preſent at the Court of *Ruſſia*, are under the Direction of Miniſters who are Foreigners, and though out of Decency, they are likewiſe communicated to two or three Natives of the Country, it is, nevertheleſs, beyond all Doubt, that the Power is only in the Hands of the Former. And they are ſo jealous of their Authority, and know ſo well how to ſupport one another, that the *Muſcovites* are only looked on as Subalterns, who dare not undertake any Thing, without their previous Advice and Conſent. In all Conſultations that Miniſter who examined me, preſides: But tho he has a great Share in the Deciſion of important Matters, yet, I believe it does not appertain ſolely to him. The others are Lords of the Court, who aſſiſt at Councils, Conferences, Audiences of foreign Miniſters, and are conſulted in all Concerns which are of any Moment. As the *Muſcovites* are naturally ſuſpicious, diffident, and imagine, that there is not a Perſon in the World whoſe Integrity can be relied on, there is always ſome Overſeer every where, which is the Reaſon that even thoſe Things, which require the utmoſt Secrecy, are treated of in the Preſence of ſeveral Perſons. How far this is advantageous or prejudicial to the State, is not my Province to determine. All I know is, that the wiſeſt Man in *Muſcovy*, tho never ſo well inclined to ſerve his Country, would find it difficult to ſucceed in any Attempt, becauſe the continual Suſpicions and Diffidence he would meet with, with Regard to himſelf, muſt diſcourage him, and make him loſe that Freedom of Mind and Sentiments, which is ſo neceſſary to terminate Affairs, that require a ready Execution.

Let

Let me now inform you of what I have learned of the ſecond Claſs of Miniſters, who are the Senators. The Senate conſiſts of *Muſcovite* Noblemen of the firſt Rank, and ſuch, as paſs for Men of a great Genius, and thorough Knowledge of Buſineſs. Among theſe there are ſome, who have ſerved the State, in the Quality of Ambaſſadors to foreign Courts, others, who have been Generals in the Army, and ſome, who have travelled through a great Part of *Europe*. I cannot inform you of the exact Number of the Senators, but am aſſured from good Hands, it is but ſmall. I know ſix or ſeven of them, with whom I have had ſome Concerns. They have a great Number of Secretaries, who are the moſt ignorant, the moſt inſolent, and at the ſame Time, the moſt preſumptuous Animals, the Earth ever bore. Theſe have under their Command a prodigious Troop of Clerks, who ſeem to be always employed. Add to this the Multitude of petty Officers, who go, indeed, by the Name of Soldiers, but may be placed among the loweſt Dregs of the Vulgar, and are the very Scum of the People. Of all theſe conſiſts that Auguſt Aſſembly called the Senate. As for the reſpective Functions of each of theſe Officers, they themſelves are frequently ſo ignorant of them, that it is no Wonder if a Stranger is ſo. All I can ſay, on that Head, is, that they generally meet four or five Hours a Day, that they take a great deal of Pains themſelves, and give no leſs to others, without advancing the Intereſts of the State. The Cuſtom of this Nation, of deferring every Thing to the Morrow, is the Occaſion that moſt Affairs are not terminated, till after many Delays. This Remiſſneſs is a natural Conſequence of the mutual Diſtruſts they entertain of each other; for as they cannot venture to deliver their Opinions with an entire Freedom, they are often neceſſitated to defer the moſt urgent Affairs to another Time. The Door of

this

this illuſtrious *Areopagus* might be properly adorned with the following Device:

Hic operoſe nihil agitur.

But this is not all. There is a third Order of Miniſters, if they may be allowed that Denomination, who compoſe what they call the Colleges; theſe Colleges are divided into different Claſſes. There is the College of War, that of Foreign Affairs, thoſe of Finances and Commerce, and ſeveral others. As I have had nothing to do with theſe Gentlemen, I can hardly give you any Account of their ſeveral Functions. I am nevertheleſs pretty confidently aſſured, that all the Members of theſe Bodies, as well that of the Senate, as thoſe, who compoſe the Colleges, are only regarded as bare Commiſſioners or Deputies under the Influence of the Miniſters, who are Foreigners, and are eſteemed their Oracles. Nothing can be done without previouſly conſulting, or receiving the Orders of theſe, and all the others live in the moſt ſervile Fear and Subjection. The Governours of Provinces dare hardly ever undertake any Thing of their own Accord, and are even ignorant, how far their Authority and Juriſdiction extends. Their natural Timidity, and the entire Dependance, they are always kept in, occaſion even Trifles to paſs with them for Matters of the greateſt Importance.

This in a few Words, is what I have been able to learn of the Form of Government eſtabliſhed in *Muſcovy*. I thought it neceſſary to give you this Abſtract,

Per quæ poſſis, cognoſcere cætera tutè.

The Fate of the *Muſcovites* would deſerve our Pity, had they any generous Paſſions, or any Ho-

nour

nour at Heart. In proceſs of Time they may perhaps ſhake off the Yoke, impoſed on them by Foreigners, and then, perhaps, we may ſee *Muſcovian* Veſpers, as we have formerly ſeen *Sicilian* Veſpers. Their Hatred of Foreigners is ſo great, that, in this Caſe, hardly one would eſcape with Life. It would be the more eaſy to execute an Enterprize of this Kind, as the Authority Foreigners have aſſumed, is only founded on a ſlaviſh Fear, into which the whole Nation is immerged.

Peter I. who uſed his utmoſt Endeavours to draw his Subjects out of Barbarity, having, in his Travels in *France*, at the Time of the Regency, made Enquiries into the then Form of Government, framed, and, in Part, executed the Project of regulating his own after that Model. He propoſed, by eſtabliſhing ſo many Councils, to employ, in the Adminiſtration, all thoſe of his Subjects, who ſhould be moſt capable of it, that in Time, they might render themſelves uſeful to their Prince and Country. I know not what Idea to frame of ſuch a Form of Government, which ſeems not the moſt ſuitable to ſo deſpotick a State, as that of *Muſcovy:* It will, I fear, in Time, produce many Diſorders, and inſenſibly tinge the Commonalty with *Republican* Principles.

We have already ſeen the Seeds of ſuch Notions at the Death of *Peter* II; for a Motion was then made to form the Government into a Commonwealth. If this Project had taken Place, we ſhould have ſeen a Plan of Government very different from that of *Plato*, A *Muſcovian* Republick! It would, without doubt, have been a Maſter-Piece! But was *Peter*. the *Great*, with all his fine Schemes and Eſtabliſhments, ſufficiently acquainted with the Genius of his Subjects? I have great Room to doubt it, and this is my Reaſon There is not to this Day a ſingle *Muſcovite*, who is not

better

betrer pleaſed with his Village, and his Oven, than with the moſt eminent Poſt of Honour. They would have been better pleas'd, if *Peter* the Great, inſtead of attempting to change Beaſts, as they were, into Men, had, on the contrary, labour'd, to reduce them from a State of Humanity to that of Brutes. All the Pains that Prince took have hardly had any Effect on his Subjects, farther than the curtailing their Beards, and a Change of their Habits. Their favourite Idols are Fire and Lazineſs, to which they are ready to ſacrifice their All. But I have ſaid enough on this Article, and ſhall now reſume the Account of my own Adventures.

At my Return to my Priſon, the Sergeant, who accompany'd me thither, offer'd me half a Ruble, to furniſh my ſelf (as he ſaid) with ſome Proviſions. I told him, I had no Occaſion for his Money, and begg'd he would rather ſend me an Interpreter, and a Barber. He left me, but I could not obtain what I ask'd for. I wiſh'd for nothing ſo much, in the Condition I was then in, as to conſult ſome Phyſician, and to be lodg'd in a more commodious Priſon, where I might enjoy that Repoſe and Tranquility, I ſtood in ſo great need of. As my Diſtemper continued, I begun to fear ſome fatal Event. Though I was eaſed of the moſt virulent Pains, and ſtrove to ſupport Nature with the beſt Diet I could; yet I was ſtill very weak. I had entirely loſt two of my Senſes, Taſte and Smell. A Thirſt, which nothing could allay, prey'd upon me inceſſantly. All theſe Symptoms did not put me under any Apprehenſions of my Life; but I was afflicted with others ſtill more grievous. A general Numbneſs ſeized all my Limbs after Sleep, and when I awaked I found my ſelf depriv'd of all Motion. My Head was then troubled with an uncommon Heavineſs. My Sight likewiſe underwent a great Change, for all Objects appeared to me double.

Theſe

Theſe Symptoms diſappeared inſenſibly after I had lain ſome Time in that deplorable Condition, but then a kind of Reſtleſſneſs enſued, for which I could not aſſign any Cauſe. I applied, from Time to Time, my own Medicines, but tho I am well aſſured, that 'tis to them I owe my Life, yet could I not perceive, that they produced any viſible Effect.

As I conſtantly reiterated my Entreaties for an Interpreter, a young Man was at laſt brought to me, who ſpoke *French*, and was accompanied by the Sergeant, and an Overſeer, which they always think requiſite in the like Caſes. As it was my Deſign, that he ſhould give a faithful Account of what I had to ſay to him, I deſired him to take it down in Writing, *viz.* " That no one might have Cauſe " to cenſure my Conduct, I declared, that, when " Money was offer'd me, of which I ſhould be " aſhamed to ſpecify the Value I did not think " fit to accept of it, not knowing from whoſe " Hands it came, and being beſides aſſured, that " Her Majeſty would never offer me a Preſent, " ſo little agreable to Her great Generoſity. I " doubted not, but that, if Her Majeſty would " be pleaſed to iſſue Her Orders, to procure me " the Suſtenance I ſtood in Need of, it would be " in a Manner, ſuitable to her Dignity, and my " Birth; but ſhould it be ſignified to me, that " whatever was offered was by Her Order, I ſhould " always receive it with the greateſt Deference. " All the Aſſiſtance, which Her Majeſty might, " in the mean Time, vouchſafe to lend me, would " be of little Service to me, unleſs I was removed " from the Priſon, where I was, as I could not " enjoy any Reſt there, either by Day, or by " Night, and unleſs I was, in the mean while, " ſupplied with what was requiſite for the Recove- " ry of my Health, which at that time was in ſo " dangerous a Situation, that I run the Hazard of

" ſinking very ſoon under the Weight of my Mi-
" ſeries. Should theſe Precautions on my Behalf
" be neglected, Her Majeſty would loſe an Op-
" portunity of puniſhing me, if I were a Crimi-
" nal; or, on the other Hand, if my Innocence
" were proved, ſhe would have the Regret of
" ſeeing a Man periſh miſerably under her Eyes,
" who came into her Dominions with no other
" View, but of devoting the Reſt of his Days to
" her Service. To conclude, there was nothing
" I ſaid, but what I had Room to hope from Her
" Majeſty's Juſtice and Clemency.

In this Memorandum I likewiſe particulariſed all thoſe Things, which I ſtood abſolutely in Need of, *viz.* another Priſon, a Phyſician, my Trunk, and a Perſon, who might, on all Occaſions, ſerve me as an Interpreter. My Clerk promiſed to give a faithful Account of all, I had dictated to him. I aſked, why they would not ſuffer me to be ſhaved, to which he replied, that they feared, I might make an Attempt upon my own Life.

My Memorandum had no farther Succeſs, but to procure the Change of my Priſon three Days afterwards, when I was removed into the Secretary's Apartment, who was obliged to ſhift his Quarters, this new Lodging gave me a little more Eaſe, tho ſome Clerk or other was every Day running in and out for Papers, which had been left there. But, on the other Hand, I was tormented with a vaſt Number of every Kind of Inſects that commonly frequent the moſt odious and filthy Places. I had every Moment the Company of huge Rats, that conſumed whatever I could procure for myſelf; and all the Furniture I had in this Secretary's Office, which I might juſtly call a Neſt of Rats, was two Chairs and a Table, without a Carpet.

This Change of Priſon did not therefore, afford me the leaſt Relief. My Sickneſs encreaſed daily, and I

ſaw

saw no Hopes of any Succour. I remember, the 24th, which was *Christmas-Eve*, being extreamly ill in my Bed, the Sergeant brought me a very large Goose and a Fowl, and gave me to understand, that this Present was sent me by Her Imperial Majesty. I answered, that the Condition I was then in required other Succour, and desired him to send me, with all Speed, a Physician, and take his Present back with him. But he left it, notwithstanding all I could say, and retired. I gave them to my Guard, to dispose of as they thought fit, and make themselves merry but I found they durst not touch them. The same Officer returned the next Morning, and made a great Bustle, because they had let those Provisions be spoiled, instead of carrying them away. I thought this a proper Time to make lively Expostulations with him about my Trunk, where all my Linnen was, which I stood the more in Need of, as I was eat up with Vermin. He took little Notice of what I said, but walk'd off with the Goose and Fowl.

The Refusal of my Trunk, which I had so long and so pressingly desired, was not without some Cause. Several Circumstances made me suspect, that they had robbed me of Part of what it contained, and strove now to conceal it. Theft is well known to be so common in *Muscovy*, that no one is ashamed of it. Great and Small, Men and Women, lay hold, without any Scruple, of the Property of another, wherever they meet with it. Hence it is, that People are always upon their Guard, and live in this Country in a continual Diffidence of each other. *Peter* I. was wont to say, that if he was to hang all the Thieves in his Dominions, he should be destitute of Subjects. My Suspicions were still farther grounded, by the Detention of the Key of my Trunk at *Muscow*, and by my seeing the Sergeant, who had conducted me

into the *Czarina*'s Palace, where he appeared like a Criminal, on whom Sentence was juſt going to be pronounced. Theſe ſeveral Conſiderations induced me to believe, that I had been robbed, and that, to conceal the Fact, and avoid the Hands of Juſtice, they had attempted to poiſon me. Their Proceedings, in Regard to me, in the Sequel, will give you very ſtrong Proofs of what I here advance.

You will, without doubt, be ſhocked at the Peruſal of theſe Circumſtances of my Adventures. Had not my Courage ſupported me in the doleful Condition I was in, I muſt have inevitably periſhed. I ſhould a thouſand Times have ſunk under the Load of my Calamities, had I not preſerved a perfect Peace of Mind amidſt my greateſt Diſtreſſes. I perceived my ſelf often at the Point of Death, deſtitute of all Relief, and of all Hopes of receiving any. Nothing afflicted me more than the Reflection of being ſacrific'd, as I was, to the Fury and unjuſt Reſentments of a Savage Nation, which, having not the leaſt Senſe of Humanity, treated me as the moſt abject of Slaves. Nevertheleſs, in the midſt of theſe Perplexities, *Neque ullam vocem protuli indignam viro, neque cedentem calamitati.* I leave you to judge, after having weighed theſe Circumſtances, what Idea the World ought to form of this Nation, which at preſent makes ſo much Noiſe in *Europe*, whoſe Alliance is ſo earneſtly ſought for, and which claims a Right to the Diſpoſal of Kiugdoms. *Spes improbiſſimas complectuntur inſperata aſſecuti.*

into

LETTER V.

SIR,

I muſt not omit begging your Excuſe for the abrupt Manner, with which I concluded my laſt. My Head was at that Time filled with ſuch melancholy Ideas, and my Heart perplexed with Motions ſo extraordinary, that I fancied my Hand was growing heavy, and my Ink appeared more black, than it really was. Theſe Symptoms made me reſolve upon taking ſome Repoſe; for, whatever I write to you, ſhall, as far as poſſible, be the Product of a Mind at Eaſe, and by no Means of an impetuous Imagination. Not that I am fearful of being too ſevere in my Cenſures of the *Muſcovites*, who certainly deſerve no Mercy; But as I engaged in this Correſpondence, with no other View, than that of ſatisfying your Curioſity, I am not ſo much intent on ſeeking Revenge for the Injuries, done me by that Nation, as on informing you of what you deſire to know of my Adventures. To continue my Narrative of them, I muſt, therefore, tell you, that, after I had been left to ſtruggle with Death, for the Space of ten Days, a Phyſician, was, at laſt, brought me by the Sergeant and an Overſeer. This Phyſician happened unfortunately to ſpeak nothing but *Latin*; which gave me a great deal of Uneaſineſs; For, though I am pretty well verſed in that Language, yet I found it difficult to expreſs my Thoughts, as I had never made made Uſe of it in familiar Diſcourſe. I therefore immediately told my Phyſician, that ſince I ſhould hardly be able to give him the true Grounds of my

Diſeaſe, I had Cauſe to fear he might not apply proper Medicines, nor give me that Aſſiſtance, I ſtood in Need of. He replyed by this Axiom, which he ſaid, was unqueſtionable: *Omnes Captivi infirmitatibus laborant*; this unpromiſing Beginning exaſperated me, *& indignatio dedit Linguam.* I anſwered him in as Philoſophical Manner, *Non doleo de captivitate, ſed de modo captivitatis.* I continued my Harangue in the ſame Tone, but in a *Latin* Idiom, as barbarous as the Country I was in. The Doctor, however, not thinking me perhaps ſo tractable, as blindly to ſubmit to his Preſcriptions, thought fit to retire: And this was all the Benefit I received from his Viſit!

An Accident happened ſome Time after, which contributed not a little to confirm the Suſpicions I had of my having been poiſoned. But give me leave to put you in mind of the following Circumſtances, before I inform you of what paſſed. Firſt, the Key of my Trunk, which was demanded, and I was forced to ſurrender at *Muſcow*: In the ſecond Place, my Sword, which was likewiſe taken from me at *Muſcow*, and locked up, in the Trunk; and laſtly, my Trunk itſelf, which had been detained from the 15th of *December*, the Day of my Arrival at *Peterſburg*, 'till the 11th of *January* 1734. My Trunk was that Day brought into my Priſon, guarded by ſeveral petty Officers, a Secretary, ſome Clerks and an Overſeer. The Secretary having firſt ſaluted me with a ſmiling Countenance, demanded the Key of the Trunk. I anſwered, that I had the ſame Demand upon him. Seemingly ſurprized at this Anſwer, he ſpoke to thoſe who were preſent, as if he was enquiring what was become of the Key.

Several Queſtions and Anſwers enſued, which tended only to delude and blind me, till at laſt the Key appeared. They begun then, by unlocking

the

the Padlock, but as it was ſealed, one of the Clerks addreſſing himſelf to the Secretary, and, by his Looks, expreſſing his Surprize, ſaid: *Sir, here are two Seals. Yes*, replied the Secretary, the better to conceal his Villany, *there are two, one of Caſan, and the other of Muſcow.* The Trunk was at laſt opened, where I found every Thing in Diſorder. I took out my Piſtols and my Sword, which could not be there, but by a very great Miracle, as they muſt have been put in, without taking off the Seal of *Caſan*. I told the Secretary, that my Arms were uſeleſs to a Priſoner, and would have put them into his Hands: But he anſwered, they muſt be left in the Trunk, which he would ſhut himſelf. It appeared to me ſomewhat extraordinary, that I ſhould be debarred the Uſe of my Cloaths; for all I could obtain was three or four Shirts, which I ſtood in great need of. They even refuſed me, with the utmoſt Barbarity, ſome *Eau des Carmes*, and other Medicines. The Secretary having firſt locked the Trunk, aſſured me, that I ſhould be ſupplied with common Neceſſaries, by Order, and at the Expence of her Majeſty, and then retired.

Theſe Circumſtances duly weighed, it will be eaſy to determine, whether I was really poiſoned or not? I ſhould even be glad, if, on this Subject, you would conſult all the Phyſicians and natural Philoſophers of your Acquaintance, who will not, in a Caſe ſo ſingular, refuſe to give you their Opinion. For my Part, I ſhould be glad to have my Suſpicions removed, by a Demonſtration, that my Diſeaſe could be the Effect of any other Cauſe than Poiſon; but beg, you would firſt maturely and leiſurely conſider the following Circumſtances.

In my laſt, you may remember, I obſerved, that the *Muſcovites* are very prone to Theft, and that it is a Vice common to the whole Nation. Hence I may infer the Probability of their embracing the firſt

Opportuni y that offered of robbing me. That this Conjecture comes nearly up to Truth, is but too evident, by the Key of my Trunk, being taken from me at *Muſcow*. And I may reaſonably ask, what Occaſion there was to ſearch my Trunk at all? It had already been looked into at *Caſan*, and was, beſides, cloſely ſealed. Had Curioſity been their ſole Inducement for viewing my Effects, they might have gratified it in my Preſence: But there are ſtill other Circumſtances. My Trunk was ſeized, on my Arr val at *Peterſburg*, without any apparent Cauſe, and the Sergeant, who had brought me thither, appeared at the *Czarina*'s Palace, in the Poſture of a Criminal. In Order to account for this Perſon's Fate, you muſt know, that my Trunk was opened, as ſoon as it was brought to *Peterſburg*, and that, after having compared the Contents with the Inventory ſent from *Caſan*, Part of the Things, ſpecified in the Liſt, was found to be wanting. The Sergeant was immediately ſuppoſed to be the Thief, or at leaſt an Accomplice in the Robbery. The Trunk was, therefore, to be detained, till the Deficiency could be repaired, and ſome one be inſtantly diſpatched to *Muſcow* to recover what was ſtolen. It is certain, the Sergeant himſelf was directly ſent back thither: For when, ſome Days after my Arrival at *Peterſburg*, I asked, what was become of my Sled, they anſwered, the Sergeant had taken it to return to *Muſcow*. In ſhort, my Trunk was not returned to me, till the 11th of *January*, twenty-ſeven Days after my Arrival at *Peterſburg*; a Time, ſufficient to go to *Muſcow*, to diſcharge the Commiſſion, which the Sergeant was entruſted with, and to return to *Peterſburg*.

Theſe are, beyond all Contradiction, Probabilities, which, on many Occaſions, might paſs for evident Proofs; but let us examine the Affair yet farther. The Secretary demanded the Key of my Trunk,

Trunk, when it was brought to me, and endeavoured to perſuade me, that it had been likewiſe ſealed at *Caſan*, in order to inſinuate, that it had not been opened ſince. Could any Thing be more ridiculous, than to imagine, I had ſuch a Stock of Credulity, as to be perſuaded, that they had neglected a thorough View of all my Effects? They were too deſirous of knowing, who I was, and of finding ſome Pretence, whereby to juſtify their Proceedings with Regard to me, to omit ſuch a Search. I ſhould likewiſe be glad to know, what they can alledge in Reſpect to my Sword, which the Officer of the Guards at *Caſan* ſeemed ſo much pleaſed with, which I wore till I reached *Muſcow*, and which at length I found in my Trunk, though they pretended it had not been opened either at *Muſcow* or at *Peterſburg*. I am certainly highly obliged to the *Muſcovites*, if they have found out the Secret of imparting to my Sword ſome of thoſe Qualities, attributed to the Thunder-Bolt, eſpecially that of penetrating the moſt ſolid Bodies, without leaving the leaſt Mark; for then I ſhall hereafter be armed as powerfully as *Jove* himſelf. What could, in fine, induce them to refuſe me my Cloaths, and to ſhut the Trunk ſo abruptly, without giving me Time to examine what was in it? I ſhould not, I believe, deviate very far from the Truth, were I to ſay that they proceeded in this unaccountable Manner, the better to conceal the Robbery, they had committed on the greateſt Part of my Equipage, the Want of which I was forced to bear with during the whole Time of my Captivity. As I have now averred the Theft, I ſhall find it more eaſy to prove, that I was poiſoned. You may perhaps ask, who were the Authors of the former Villany? For your Satisfaction, let it ſuffice, that I put you in Mind of my having caſt the Nativity of the Secretary of *Muſcow*, when the Humour took me to tell him, that the Gallows would ſoon be his Fate.

And in Reality the whole Matter muſt fall upon that Secretary, and his Accomplices.

My Sickneſs became in the mean while ſo extream, and I was reduced to ſo feeble a State, that my Guard were obliged to carry me, whenever I had occaſion to eaſe Nature. I was again afflicted with a Cholick, accompanied with Pains, ſo violent, that I almoſt begun to fear I had been poiſoned a ſecond Time. This new Paroxiſm was however, of a ſhort Duration, it left me inſenſibly, and I found my ſelf in better Health, than I had been before. The inceſſant Requeſts, I had long made, for a Phyſician, were at laſt complied with. He was accompanied by the ſame Clerk, who had played his Leger-de-main Tricks with the two Seals, at the opening of my Trunk. The Doctor, who ſpoke good *Italian*, immediately enquired into the Nature of my Diſtemper. I told him, that to give him a true Idea of it, I could not avoid entring into ſeveral Particulars, which would neceſſarily require his Attention. After having given him an Account of my Conſtitution, I acquainted him what befel me at my Departure from *Muſcaw*. My Phyſician was every Moment interrupted by the Clerk who was preſent, and, as he had Orders to write down this whole Conſultation, was teazing him to know what I ſaid; he even deſired us, in preſſing Terms, to haſten to a Concluſion. The Phyſician, who had his Inſtructions, ſeemed to give Way to the Secretary's Inſtances, and before he had Time to inform himſelf of my Diſeaſe, adviſed me to take a Vomit, and to be blooded. To this I anſwered, that I could not prevail upon my ſelf to follow the Advice which he gave me, without informing himſelf of my Diſeaſe: That as for the Emetick, I was reſolved not to take it; and, though I might hope for ſome Relief from Bleeding, yet I could not with any Probability expect a Surgeon, ſince they had refuſed to ſend me a Barber,

Barber, leſt I ſhould make away with my ſelf. I then informed him of the Treatment I had met with, but all the Anſwer, he made me was, that I muſt conform to the Cuſtoms of the Country. The Clerk, likewiſe, thought fit to give me his Advice, and ſaid, that Grief being my Diſeaſe, I muſt wait my Remedy from Time and Circumſtances. This ſtung me to the quick, and put me in Mind of my former Phyſician's Axiom. To convince him of this Miſtake, I told him, in theſe very Terms: "Sir, my "Mind has no Share in the doleful Condition I am "reduced to, and give me leave to tell you, that "a Man, tho a Priſoner, may enjoy a perfect Free-"dom of Mind. But the Caſe is this, you have "neither Orders nor Leiſure to hear me ſpeak, and "ſeem but little inclined to give me that Aſſiſtance, "I ſtand ſo much in Need of; therefore, not to de-"tain you any longer, you are at Liberty to be "gone. All the Favour I ask of you is, to tell "thoſe Gentlemen, who ſent you, that a Patient is "not relieved by the bare Sight of a Phyſician, and "that no Remedy ought to be preſcribed to me, "till I am allowed to tell my Caſe. Your Viſits "will be always agreeable, and may prove highly "beneficial to me, if you have ſo much Influence "as to procure me that Permiſſion; but if it be "thought improper to grant me that Favour, to "give your ſelf any farther Trouble, ſeems to me "entirely needleſs." Whether my Phyſician was pleaſed with this Compliment I know not; but the contrary ſeems moſt probable, for he inſtantly retired, and gave himſelf no farther Trouble about me.

I continued to fare very hard, notwithſtanding the repeated Promiſes made me, ſeveral Days together, that I ſhould be maintained by the Order, and at the Expence, of Her Imperial Majeſty, and I ſaw no ſigns of any thing being ſent me by that Princeſs.

The

The Matter was, I ſuppoſe, deemed ſo very important, that it required a Reſpite, till the Morrow. This Rule is generally obſerved by the *Muſcovites*, when the Point in Debate relates to Diſburſements: And they are certainly right; for Money is not ſo ſcarce, in any other Country in the World. An Interpreter, at laſt appeared, after I had long waited for him, accompanied by two or three Perſons, who came to tell me, he had Orders to provide for my Suſtenance. I expreſſed my Satisfaction at this News, and told him, the ſooner the better. But how replied he, do you expect to be ſerved? How ſaid I? Juſt as you think fit, provided it be not after the *Muſcovian* Manner, for their Ragoos I am not accuſtomed to. He then conſulted with thoſe, who were preſent, and ſaid, that I might have Money allowed me, and asked how much would do? This Queſtion made me laugh, and I deſired to know, in my turn, if he took me for a Perſon that would accept of Money. I ordered him to tell his Maſters, that I ſhould always, with the utmoſt Deference and Gratitude, accept of whatever ſhould be offered me by Her Majeſty's Order. This Reply gave Occaſion to a freſh Conſultation, which being ended, this weighty Affair was put off to the Morrow.

The Neceſſity I lay under of making my Caſe known to ſome able Phyſician, put me upon writing an exact Relation of all that had happened to me, to ſend it to Monſ. *du Vernoi*, Anatomy-Profeſſor. You may remember the Character I have already given you of him. He is a Man of Merit, and one to whom I am greatly obliged. At the ſame Time, I wrote a ſhort Memorial to the Empreſs, wherein I complained of the Manner in which I was treated. I was told, they ſhould both be ſafely delivered; but as neither of them produced the Effect I hoped, they probably were both ſuppreſſed. I was even treated with more Severity than before; for after this, notwithſtanding

withſtanding all my Remonſtrances, I never could obtain either Phyſician or Interpreter, either Pen and Ink, or my Cloaths.

That theſe Gentlemen acted, with the utmoſt Injuſtice, with Regard to me, is moſt certain; and yet they may have had their Motives to palliate thoſe Proceedings. In order to unfold this Myſtery, I muſt put you in Mind of the Hatred, which the *Muſcovites* bear to all Strangers who are any Expence to them. This undoubted Truth is one of the Motives, which induce me to believe, that the Gentlemen in the Adminiſtration at *Muſcow*, were reſolved upon my Perdition at any Rate. And indeed, what Neceſſity could there be to detain me in that City eight or ten Days? Why was I, at my Arrival at *Peterſberg*, refuſed the immediate Benefit of a Phyſician, ſince there are ſo many of the Profeſſion in that Place? At laſt indeed they ſent me one, but he ſpoke *Latin* only, and the Converſation I had with him, was, beſides, ſo very ſhort, that he could not poſſibly be informed of my Caſe, nor apply proper Remedies. As they knew I was an *Italian*, and there are three or four Phyſicians of that Nation in the Town, why was I not permitted to ſpeak to one of them? They very well knew, I was converſant in the *French* Tongue, why was not ſome one of that Nation ſuffered to come to me? The ſecond Phyſician ſpoke, I confeſs, the *Italian* Tongue very well; but the Orders, which were given to interrupt our Converſation every Moment, hindered me from making my Caſe known. They feared, and very juſtly too, that, had I given an exact Account of it, the Phyſician would have diſcovered the real Cauſe of my Diſtemper. What can be inferred from their Refuſal of letting me make Uſe of the Medicines, I had in my Trunk? They were probably afraid, that thoſe Remedies might reſtore my Health, which they did their utmoſt Endea-

vours to prevent. The Attempt, they had made on my Life, would, they hoped, be concealed from the World by my Death. The Expedient they made Uſe of to ſilence my Complaints, was very odd. They allowed me to write to a Phyſician, but, at the ſame Time, intercepted my Letter, becauſe the Peruſal of it might diſcloſe a Secret, which it was too much their Intereſt to conceal. Therefore, to compaſs their iniquitous Scheme, they could uſe no better Means, than that of leaving me alone. It would perhaps be difficult, to diſcover, how the Poiſon was conveyed to me, and to name the principal Authors of ſo execrable an Attempt, but that they did find Means to give it me, and that every *Muſcovite* is juſtly liable to be ſuſpected thereof, are moſt indiſputable Truths.

Ad te, quiſquis is es, noſtra querela redit.

I now leave you to judge, whether the Report, ſpread throughout all *Europe*, of the Death of the three laſt Sovereigns of *Muſcovy* being owing to Poiſon, was ſo very groundleſs. They will certainly find it very difficult, to clear themſelves from an Imputation, which is but too well founded. They are already known by too many injquitous Paſſages, not to be thought capable of any Thing. In all their Proceedings, they are known to conſult their private Intereſt only, and the Project they have formed, of extending their Dominions, has induced them to commit all kinds of Injuſtice, in Regard to their Neighbours. They have invaded the fineſt Countries, to open their Way into *Germany*. They have long ſince aimed at the ſole Dominion of the *Baltick*. The whole World is ſenſible of the Tyranny they exerciſe in *Poland*, after having ſowed Diſcord in that Kingdom. And *Europe* has Reaſon to fear their penetrating yet farther, and kindling a Flame in

other

other Countries, as they have done in *Poland*. It is the Intereſt of more Potentates, than one, to ſet Bounds to their Ambition, and to break their Meaſures; and it were to be wiſhed, that a Method might be ſpeedily found of driving them back into their Foreſts, and lurking Holes, where they lived whole Ages in Obſcurity. As they deſire nothing more earneſtly, than to revive their antient Cuſtoms, and to live unknown to the reſt of Mankind, nothing could be of greater Service to them. They bear ſo great an Averſion to the Innovations, which have been attempted to be introduced among them, in the laſt forty Years, that, if they were left to themſelves, they would ſoon ſhake off the Yoke, which they think is impoſed on them. This Nation is fit for nothing but to be kept in Bondage and Obſcurity. Is it not ſurprizing, that notwithſtanding the abſolute Power of their Monarchs, they have hitherto been ſo unſucceſsful in their Endeavours, to render this Country flouriſhing in Commerce, and to eſtabliſh Religion and Sciences among them.

Whoever ſhould undertake to enquire into the Origin of the *Muſcovites*, muſt be greatly perplexed by this their ſingular Character. If I could prevail upon my ſelf to believe, that there were *Pre-adamites*, I ſhould almoſt have ſworn, that the *Muſcovites* are their Deſcendants. And they muſt certainly be allowed to owe their Extraction to a Set of Men, very different, from any we now meet with. I have, after many Reflections, formed a Conjecture, which appears to me entirely well grounded, and will, I am aſſured, notwithſtanding its Novelty, meet with your Approbation. You cannot be ignorant of the unanimous Conſent of Hiſtorians, in the mention they make of this Nation, that no Traces can be found of its antient State, and that the profound Ignorance, in which it has been always involved, has rendered all Enquiries, into its Original, entirely fruitleſs.

vours to prevent. The Attempt, they had made on my Life, would, they hoped, be concealed from the World by my Death. The Expedient they made Uſe of to ſilence my Complaints, was very odd. They allowed me to write to a Phyſician, but, at the ſame Time, intercepted my Letter, becauſe the Peruſal of it might diſcloſe a Secret, which it was too much their Intereſt to conceal. Therefore, to compaſs their iniquitous Scheme, they could uſe no better Means, than that of leaving me alone. It would perhaps be difficult, to diſcover, how the Poiſon was conveyed to me, and to name the principal Authors of ſo execrable an Attempt, but that they did find Means to give it me, and that every *Muſcovite* is juſtly liable to be ſuſpected thereof, are moſt indiſputable Truths.

Ad te, quiſquis is es, noſtra querela redit.

I now leave you to judge, whether the Report, ſpread throughout all *Europe*, of the Death of the three laſt Sovereigns of *Muſcovy* being owing to Poiſon, was ſo very groundleſs. They will certainly find it very difficult, to clear themſelves from an Imputation, which is but too well founded. They are already known by too many injquitous Paſſages, not to be thought capable of any Thing. In all their Proceedings, they are known to conſult their private Intereſt only, and the Project they have formed of extending their Dominions, has induced them to commit all kinds of Injuſtice, in Regard to their Neighbours. They have invaded the fineſt Countries, to open their Way into *Germany*. They have long ſince aimed at the ſole Dominion of the *Baltick*. The whole World is ſenſible of the Tyranny they exerciſe in *Poland*, after having ſowed Diſcord in that Kingdom. And *Europe* has Reaſon to fear their penetrating yet farther, and kindling a Flame in other

other Countries, as they have done in *Poland*. It is the Intereſt of more Potentates, than one, to ſet Bounds to their Ambition, and to break their Meaſures; and it were to be wiſhed, that a Method might be ſpeedily found of driving them back into their Foreſts, and lurking Holes, where they lived whole Ages in Obſcurity. As they deſire nothing more earneſtly, than to revive their antient Cuſtoms, and to live unknown to the reſt of Mankind, nothing could be of greater Service to them. They bear ſo great an Averſion to the Innovations, which have been attempted to be introduced among them, in the laſt forty Years, that, if they were left to themſelves, they would ſoon ſhake off the Yoke, which they think is impoſed on them. This Nation is fit for nothing but to be kept in Bondage and Obſcurity. Is it not ſurprizing, that notwithſtanding the abſolute Power of their Monarchs, they have hitherto been ſo unſucceſsful in their Endeavours, to render this Country flouriſhing in Commerce, and to eſtabliſh Religion and Sciences among them.

Whoever ſhould undertake to enquire into the Origin of the *Muſcovites*, muſt be greatly perplexed by this their ſingular Character. If I could prevail upon my ſelf to believe, that there were *Pre-adamites*, I ſhould almoſt have ſworn, that the *Muſcovites* are their Deſcendants. And they muſt certainly be allowed to owe their Extraction to a Set of Men, very different, from any we now meet with. I have, after many Reflections, formed a Conjecture, which appears to me entirely well grounded, and will, I am aſſured, notwithſtanding its Novelty, meet with your Approbation. You cannot be ignorant of the unanimous Conſent of Hiſtorians, in the mention they make of this Nation, that no Traces can be found of its antient State, and that the profound Ignorance, in which it has been always involved, has rendered all Enquiries, into its Original, entirely fruitleſs.

fruitleſs. This great Difficulty has kept all Hiſtorians in Suſpence, and deterred them from attempting any Deciſion on this Article. But I will lead you into the Path they ſhould have followed, and which I my ſelf have taken, in making this ſignal Diſcovery.

Whenever the Origin of a People is not diſcoverable by any Monuments of Antiquity, we muſt of Neceſſity examine their Manners and Cuſtoms, and compare them with thoſe of other Nations, and eſpecially of their Neighbours. This being premiſed, I need only put you in Mind of a Piece of Hiſtory, which you are not ignorant of, tho you may not know how ſo eaſily to fix it to any certain Period. You may remember to have read, that the *Scythians*, at their Return from their third Expedition in *Aſia*, met, on the Frontiers of their Country, a numerous Army, ready to oppoſe their Entrance. Their own Wives, being tired of ſo long a State of Viduity, had all agreed to throw themſelves into the Arms of their Slaves, and had inſpired thoſe baſe Lovers with ſufficient Courage and Strength to take up Arms. The *Scythians*, informed of this Procedure, conſulted among themſelves, what Courſe to take. They imagined, that to employ their Arms againſt their Slaves, would be to debaſe themſelves: They therefore, armed themſelves with Scourges only, and in that Manner marched againſt the Rebels, who, awed by the Preſence of their Maſters, were immediately ſeized with a Panick, and endeavoured to ſave themſelves by Flight. Theſe Wretches, fearful of a Purſuit, penetrated very far towards the *North*, into a Country, then un inhabited, which their Deſcendants ſtill poſſeſs.

If you caſt your Eyes upon a Map, it will inſtantly appear to you, that the Country, into which theſe Slaves made their Retreat, muſt neceſſarily be

the

the ſame, which is now known by the Name of *Muſcovy*. It would be derogatory from the extenſive Knowledge you have in Hiſtory, ſhould I here attempt to prove this Fact, which is atteſted by all Authors, who have written of the *Scythians* and their Country. This great Event is likewiſe confirmed by an authentick Monument, which we to this Day meet with in *Muſcovy*, for the Place, to which they at firſt retired, is ſtill known by the Name of *the City of Slaves*.

Such is the Original of the *Muſcovites*, which none, but themſelves, ought to regard as a Myſtery. You need therefore no longer think it ſtrange, that a People, deſcended from ſuch Anceſtors, has ſtrove, to remain in Obſcurity, by neglecting to tranſmit to Poſterity theſe Titles, and all other Monuments, which could lead us to the Knowledge of them. The *Muſcovites* would thereby have diſcovered themſelves to be not only Slaves by Birth, but likewiſe Traitors, Cowards and Rebels. All theſe fine Qualities are ſtill diſcernable in that Nation, and it is well known, that Slavery has been handed down among them from Father to Son, without any Interruption, till the preſent Age. The Aſſurance, wherewith they boaſt themſelves to be Deſcendants of the *Scythians*, may therefore be pardoned, provided they mean in the Manner I have here explained.

To remove all Doubts, that may be raiſed on this Head, I beg leave to add a Word or two about thoſe *Tartars*, who are Neighbours of the *Muſcovites*. You know, without Doubt, that theſe People are the ſame *Scythians*, of whom ſeveral Authors make Mention, and whoſe Exploits were formerly famous throughout the whole World. Theſe are the People, who poſſeſs, to this Day, beſides great *Tartary*, the two fineſt Empires in the World, which are *China* and *Mogul*. Not-

withſtanding the vaſt Extent of the Countries this Nation is Maſter of, there is not a ſingle Tribe among them, but is thoroughly acquainted not only with their common Origin, but likewiſe in particular with their own Deſcent. They can inform you, with the utmoſt Accuracy, what Branch they are deſcended from. Whence proceeds then ſo great a Difference, as we here obſerve, between two Nations bordering on each other? It may be very eaſily explained. The *Tartars* are thoſe famous *Scythians*, who glory in their Origin; and the *Muſcovites* are thoſe cowardly Slaves, whoſe Deſcent and Extraction have rendered them infamous.

Whatever Arguments the *Muſcovites* advance, with a View of perſuading us, that they are Deſcendants of the *Scythians*, this ſingle Obſervation may almoſt ſuffice to ſubvert. But I cannot really perceive, that they have any Thing in common with that Nation. The greateſt Part of the modern *Tartars*, on the contrary, ſeem to have an entire Reſemblance with thoſe ancient *Scythians*. *Juſtin*, *Herodotus*, and ſome other Authors, deſcribe the Manners, and relate the brave Exploits of thoſe Conquerors, and, if you compare them with what we read of the *Mungals* and *Kalmucs*, you will find a very great Reſemblance between thoſe People. An intrepid Courage, and a ſurprizing Magnanimity, are Qualities, which we obſerve in the *Tartars* here mentioned; but the *Muſcovites* diſtinguiſh themſelves only by their Cowardice and Baſeneſs. You will not find it an eaſy Matter, Sir, to meet, in Hiſtory, with Conjectures better founded, than theſe, about the Original of the *Muſcovites*; therefore, *ſi tibi vera videntur dede manus*. And with this I ſhall conclude my Letter, reſerving for the next a Subject more jocoſe and diverting. You judge very rightly, that, to entertain you with Matters of this Kind, which

ought

ought always to be treated not only, *corpore valido*, but likewiſe, *animo ſereno*, I muſt needs put a great Conſtraint on my ſelf. In the mean Time,

Ut, qui jocularia ridens,
Percurram:

LETTER VI.

SIR,

THE Treatment I here meet with is certainly moſt extraordinary. The *Muſcovites*, perceiving that my Sickneſs did not put an End to my Life, endeavoured by all poſſible Means to effect it by Hunger. This would certainly have been the Event of their Barbarity, had I not received timely Aſſiſtance from Mr *de L'Iſle* and his Wife. I ſhall, in the Sequel, have frequent Occaſion to mention them both, and, by what I ſhall ſay of them, you'll find, that Miniſters, Generals of Armies and Warriours are not the only Perſons, who promote the Honour of the *French* Nation. In order to apprize you fully of what I have to ſay, it will be proper to reſume the Thread of my Relation.

Though my Diſeaſe was become Chronical, and in a Manner incurable, it was nevertheleſs not ſo violent as before, and I begun to be ſenſible of the Neceſſity I lay under of taking ſome ſolid, nouriſhing Food, which might ſupport Nature, and inſenſibly increaſe my Strength. All the Proviſions, which my Guard brought me, at my own Expence, were ſo dear, and, at the ſame Time, ſo very bad, that I reſolved at laſt, to ſeek for other Diet. The Gentleman and Lady before

mentioned were therefore to be applied to, and I found it neceſſary to beg of them, to ſend me ſome Wine, and other Proviſions, which I ſtood moſt in Need of. As I was neither permitted to ſpeak, nor to write to any one, my greateſt Difficulty was, how to acquaint them with my Deſires. I found Means at laſt, after having given my ſelf a great deal of Trouble, to put my Project in Execution, by prevailing upon a Clerk to write down whatever I ſhould dictate to him in the *Ruſſian* Tongue. You muſt not wonder to find me dictating a Letter in this Tongue, for Neceſſity is the beſt Maſter of Languages, *Ingeníque largitor venter.* I had begun ſome Time before to underſtand the Language of the Country pretty well, and knew enough to ask for what I ſtood in Need of.

Mr. *de L' Iſle* no ſooner received my Letter, than he ſent me much more than I deſired. I had no Room to doubt of his being apprized of my Adventures, and of my Arrival at *Peterſburg*; becauſe his Brother, without Doubt, had adviſed him of my Fate: And beſides, as I named him, in my Examination, it is highly probable, he was likewiſe interrogated. I have even been ſince informed, that he was placed behind a Door, to ſee whether he knew me. Having ſoon conſumed the Proviſions, ſent me by Mr. *De L'Iſle*, and what I had provided at my own Expence, as they had ſeveral Times promiſed, I ſhould be furniſhed with Neceſſaries by Order of the Court, and I ſaw no Effect of this Promiſe, I thought it my Duty to expoſtulate pretty warmly with the Officer on that Head. He anſwered, that, ſince I had declared my Averſion to *Muſcovite* Ragoos, they were extreamly at a Loſs, what to provide for me. Little ſatisfied with ſo poor a Pretence, I ſpoke to him in ſuch haughty Terms, as terrified him from coming near me again in haſte. And ſo it is with

the *Muſcovites*, in general, not excepting their Soldiers, when they meet with any Oppoſition.

It is pretty extraordinary, that I could never learn what they call a Man of Courage in the *Ruſſian* Tongue. I am almoſt inclined to think, that, as there is not a Man among them, who has the leaſt Valour to boaſt of, ſuch a Term would be entirely uſeleſs to them. This Cowardice, and a certain brutiſh Diſpoſition, equally natural to them, are Qualities, which I cannot well reconcile. * They have a Law, whereby all Subjects are forbid to draw their Swords, and it has been ſo religiouſly obſerved throughout the whole Empire, that there has not been one Inſtance of its being violated. I know not whether they have any Laws to prevent Theft, but, if they have, they are not much enforced. What Inference may we draw from this Obſervation? May we not juſtly ſay, that they are naturally inclined to Pilfering, and that their Puſillanimity is the Occaſion that they never draw their Swords? I leave you to decide this Queſtion, and doubt not, but you will be of my Opinion.

In the mean Time, I gave my Guard to underſtand, that, as they continued to neglect bringing me any Proviſions, I ſhould find Means of being admitted to the *Czarina's* Preſence, and that I ſhould make my Complaints to Her Majeſty of thoſe, who refuſed to execute her Orders. I repeated theſe Menaces to the whole Body of Clerks, who were in my Anti-Chamber, and my Officer venturing at laſt to appear again, I aſſured him, I would break the Windows, and entreat Relief, of thoſe who paſſed by in the Street. Theſe Threats produced their Effect; for, the next Morning, the Corporal came with a Purſe in his Hand, and ſaid,

* There does not ſeem to be much Difficulty in reconciling them; for Bullies are always Cowards.

that I might order what I pleaſed. I told him I wanted Bread, Wine, Sugar and Meat, all which he ſoon after brought me. I gave the ſame Orders the next Day, but found it no longer complied with. One of my Guard refuſed to take the Money I offered him, to buy what I ſtood in Need of, pretending he had received Orders not to concern himſelf with any of my Commiſſions. I was not a little ſurprized to hear of ſuch an Order, but was obliged to put up with it, and to make ſhift with the Remnants of the preceding Day. After this, I had but very little, and ſometimes nothing at all to eat for ſome Days. When it was my Fate to faſt, one of the Soldiers took up a *Violin*, and invited me to dance, ſaying, *French*-Men could forget Hunger for a Jigg. This Farce diverted me for a Time, but my Patience being, at length, tired, I was again ſo buſy with my Threats, that my Soldiers, brought me the ſame Evening a fine Piece of roaſted Meat, ſome Bread and Wine: And no leſs a Feaſt than this would have ſufficed to allay my voracious Appetite. When my Repaſt was ended, folding up a Piece of Paper, in which ſome Salt had been wrapped, I accidentally ſaw ſome Writing upon it. Curioſity inducing me to read it, I perceived, it contained only ſome Aſtronomical Calculations. I immediately conceived, that I was obliged to Mr. *De L'Iſle* and his Wife for my Supper; and was ſo enraged at this Proceeding, that I made uſe of the moſt bitter Invectives to reproach the Corporal. I even threatened him, Her Imperial Majeſty ſhould know how her Orders were executed, being aſſured, ſhe would reward them all with a Halter. He begun to excuſe himſelf by the Difficulty, he pretended, there was in pleaſing me, but I was ſo loud with my Complaints, that he retired in a Pannick.

Were

Were I to relate the many Scenes I paſſed thro on this Account, I ſhould never have done. It may ſuffice, to tell you, that all the Food I had, from the 11th of *January* to the 15th of *February*, were ſent me by Mr. *De L'Iſle*. This Gentleman even gave my Guard ſome other Neceſſaries, but thoſe Villains thought fit, as I afterwards found, to keep them for their own Uſe. I had been in great Danger of being ſtarved in my Priſon, had I not been ſo kindly aſſiſted by Mr. *De L'Iſle*. The Impoſſibility the *Muſcovites* lie under of maintaining their Priſoners, whilſt they have ſo large a Number of Foreigners on their Hands, is the only Pretence that can juſtify their Conduct with Regard to me. Could you ever have thought, that the whole Revenue of this vaſt Empire does not amount to above ten or twelve Millions of Crowns? Their Generoſity cannot be very extenſive out of ſo inconſiderable an Income. But after all, you may object, Why was I not ſatisfied with what they gave me? Was it not ſufficient, to be fed in the Manner they live themſelves? Black Bread, Salt, and often putrid Fiſh, are the Victuals, and Water the Drink, they generally put up with in *Muſcovy*. Could a Priſoner as I was, a Perſon unknown, expect to meet with a better Treatment? Had they vouchſafed me the Allowance, given in other Countries to Priſoners of State, I ſhould alone have conſumed as much, as would have ſerved half a Dozen of *Muſcovite* Families. The Scarceneſs of Money in this Country, and the Miſery, the People are reduced to, can hardly be imagined. In the whole Extent of *Muſcovy*, there does not ſo much Money circulate, during the Courſe of a Year, as at *Paris*, *London*, and *Amſterdam* in a ſingle Day. I believe I ſhould ſpeak within Compaſs, if I tell you, that the daily Expence of a ſingle Merchant at *London* far exceeds that of a

whole

whole City in *Muſcovy*. This impoſſibility which they laboured under of maintaining me, in the Manner I ought to have been treated, was the Reaſon that they gladly left that Care to Mr. *de L' Iſle* and his Wife, who were both as kind and generous to me, as the People in *France* generally are to Strangers. Tho I forbid my Guard going to aſk for any Thing at Mr. *de L'Iſle*'s, yet they conſtantly went thither, and not a Day paſſed that I did not receive ſome Tokens of their Benevolence. I aſſure you, his Generoſity to me, exceeded whatever I could expect from the beſt of my Friends. I intend to let you know more on this Article on an other Occaſion. Permit me now to entertain you with an Account how I employed my Time in my Priſon.

I found Means to make a ſhift without Pen, Paper or Ink, as I was deſtitute of thoſe Helps. A Nail, which by Chance I found in my Priſon, ſupplied the Place of a Pen, and, inſtead of Paper, I made uſe of the Table, from whence they had taken away the Carpet. I had therefore no Occaſion for Ink, to write with. I begun by engraving on the Edge of the Drawer theſe Words:

Inter ſcribas et Phariſæos innocens erat.

After this I undertook to embroider all my Table, and my firſt Attempt was an Encomium on the *Czarina*, in the following Words:

Anna della tue glorie al ſcriver pronto
Dell' ala della fama
Piuma ſtringer vorrei;
Ma miſero ſol ſervo
Suelta dal Carcer mio penna di ferro.

Having

Having thus begun to take delight in Poetry, I made theſe following Lines.

Anna delle tue Lodi
Pur dir vorrei, Ma alla materia vaſta
Un ſol foglio poſeggo ed ei non baſta.

It would be difficult to account, *ut ſic repente Poeta prodirem*. But however it happened my Table, was, in a few Days, covered with wretched Verſes. The *Muſcovites* underſtood nothing of the Matter; nor, indeed, did I make them for their Uſe. I reſolved, after having filled my Table, to engrave on the Door of my Priſon an Account of my moſt remarkable Adventures in *Muſcovy*. There you may read, that I was refuſed a Barber, leſt I ſhould make Uſe of his Razor to cut my own Throat; and that they would not allow me a Phyſician, becauſe he might have cured me, and ſaved my Life. Theſe two Incidents occaſioned me to propoſe the Riddle of a Man, who could neither live, nor dye. And I was in reality in the Caſe of that Perſon, to whom a *Gaſcoon* ſaid, If you draw near, I ſhall kill you; and if you go back, you are a dead Man. This unhappy Man could, in ſo great an Extremity, no Way avoid the imminent Danger, without becoming inviſible, which was likewiſe the Advice the *Gaſcoon* gave him. As this Behaviour of the *Muſcovites*, in Regard to me, was a very evident Proof of their Barbarity, I reſolved, in order to perpetuate the Memory thereof, to addreſs the following Lines to their Secretaries:

Signori Secretari,
Che il Barbiero negate,
Ed il Medico non date,
Siete Cervelli rari.
Voi dite Barbiere nè;

Che uccideti vó ;
Ma il Medico ? Iol, ſo
Perehe ſanarmi può.
Ocridicolo abſurdo : In fede mia
Ignorate eſſer forza queſta Porta
Aperta o chiuſa ſia

It is a Phenomenon, ſomewhat ſtrange, to be expoſed to periſh by Hunger, and as this was my Caſe in *Muſcovy*, I thought an Occurrence of that kind deſerved to be tranſmitted to Poſterity. Theſe are the Verſes I compoſed on that Subject :

Signori Secretari, dite un puoco
Per chi voi mi prendete ?
Se per uomo : O per ſpirto : ſe ſon tale,
Guardate non vi faccia inſpiritare.
Ma ſe uomo ſon io, date a mangeare.
Forſi perche ſenza verun ſoccorſo
Non mori di gran male
Mi credete immortale ?

Such was my Occupation in my Priſon. Any one beſides my ſelf, would have taken Pains to broach Invectives againſt the *Muſcovites*, but to tell you the Truth, I thought them unworthy of my Anger. An Affair happened, in the mean Time, at which, tho ludicrous enough, I conld not forbear expreſſing ſome Indignation. The Matter was this :

As my Confinement begun to be irkſome to me, not a Day paſſed that I did not make ſome ſerious Reflections on the Motives, that could induce the *Muſcovites* to keep me ſo long cloſed between four Walls. I thought, that they begun to forget me, and reſolved to ſeek ſome Method of making my ſelf the Subject of Publick Diſcourſe. My Beard appeared moſt proper to awaken their Minds, and to give the Alarm to my whole Guard. It had,

for

for ſome Time, been of a frightful Length. I daily obſerved the Clerks who came into my Chamber, telling one another, that I was not unlike a *Tartar*. As I ſhould rather chooſe to reſemble a *Tartar*, than a *Muſcovite*, this Compariſon gave me no great Offence. In order to convince them of my entire Indifference as to all their Railleries, on my Beard, I ſometimes told them, that, if *Peter* I. had met me in his Dominions, I ſhould have met but with a bad Reception. I even made ſome Verſes, and engraved them on my Table, by which I gave them to underſtand, that my Beard was ſo far from rendering me dejected, and giving me the Air of a Criminal, that it added to my Courage and Reſolution. I frequently talked in this Strain, and to confirm what I ſaid, the more, I added theſe Words:

Barbatum hoc crede Magiſtrum
Dicere.

I took, however, the Reſolution of cutting off my Beard, and I even intended to give them Notice of it, notwithſtanding the Indifference I expreſſed about it. You know, I always wear on my Arm one of thoſe Stones, ſo famed in the Writings of the Learned, which ought, if I had been ſomewhat more credulous, to have been in greater Eſteem with me, during the Courſe of my Adventures. Having called my Corporal, I ſhewed him the Stone, proteſting, that, if he did not inſtantly ſend me a Barber, I would cauſe a Genius, whom I pretended to have at Command, and to keep incloſed there, to come immediately, and ſhave me. At hearing theſe Words, he ſeemed to be in a Maze, and, having alternatively caſt his Eyes on me and my Stone, trembling, replied, that he would carry my Meſſage to his Officers, and return immediately with their Anſwer. At his return, he told me, I muſt

have

have a little more Patience, and that it was ſtill thought improper, to grant my Requeſt. Diſſatisfied with this repeated Refuſal, I directly reſolved to perform the Office of a Barber my ſelf. No ſooner were my Guard intent upon ſomething elſe, than I took my Sciſſars, which ſupplied the want of a Razor, and ſoon after ſhewed my ſelf again to the Corporal, without a Beard. His Aſtoniſhment was beyond Expreſſion; he was in a perfect Rapture.

I eaſily foreſaw, that I muſt arm my ſelf with Courage againſt the Conſequences, which this Affair might produce, and be prepared for all Events. As nobody appeared all that Day, I concluded it gave them little or no Concern. But was told by my Guard, the next Morning, that my Beard had cauſed a great Diſturbance, and that they themſelves expected to be puniſhed, for not obſerving my Actions more narrowly. By their Diſcourſe I perceived, they had no thoughts of my having Sciſſars, and that I ſhould certainly be eſteemed an arrant Sorcerer. The Reluctance I had of paſſing for a Magician, and ſeeing my Guard undeſervedly laſhed, made me frankly own I had a Pair of Sciſſars, and had made Uſe of them, to cut off my Beard. An univerſal Alarm enſued, the Clerks in the Anti-Chamber made it the whole Subject of their Diſcourſe, and looked upon this Trifle, as a Matter of the utmoſt Importance. The Noiſe, this Affair made, gave me but little Uneaſineſs, but I was highly ſurprized, when the Sergeant of my Guard, the Corporal, and ſeven or eight Soldiers, came, with their Swords drawn, into my Chamber. The Sight of this effeminate Troop was nevertheleſs ſo far from terrifying me, that I prepared for a vigorous Reſiſtance, in Caſe of an Attack.

The Sergeant broke Silence, and demanded my Sciſſars, but all the Anſwer I gave him, was, that I

did

did not underſtand him. I made the ſame Reply to the Corporal and Soldiers, who likewiſe made the ſame Demand. In vain they made various Signs, for me to apprehend their Meaning, and the Sergeant, in particular, put his Fingers to his Whiskers, to ſignify that they deſired to have the Sciſſars, with which I had cut off my Beard. They went out of my Room, when I ordered them to fetch me an Interpreter, but returned a quarter of an Hour after, attended by a much larger Number of Soldiers. They found me ſitting, and, approaching me, repeated their former Demand. I deſired them, in plain Terms, to retire, and ſignified that I was not ſufficiently verſed in the *Ruſſian* Tongue, to make them any Anſwer. The Drawer of my Table being half open, one of theſe Men of War, more bold than the reſt, very inſolently put in his Hand. I was going at the very Inſtant, to ſhut the Drawer, and pinch his Hand, but he deprived me of this Pleaſure, by withdrawing it very ſeaſonably. I got up, at the ſame Time, ſomewhat haſtily, and, having called my Guard, made Signs to them, immediately to rid me of this raſcally Crew. Thus ended the Uproar, occaſioned by my Sciſſars. The *Italian* Comedians could, I believe, hardly preſent a Piece, which would afford the *Czarina* more Pleaſure, than this, and, had that Princeſs known, that there was a Theatre open ſo near her, where her own Subjects acted ſuch diverting Parts, I am pretty well aſſured, my Priſon would have been honoured with Her Majeſty's Preſence. You ſee, Sir, I am as good as my Word, I promiſed you ſomething ludicrous, and you have no Reaſon to complain of any Want of it in this Letter. I leave it to your Judgment, after you have peruſed it. As I have already entertained you with ſome Verſes, which I made, when my Requeſt for a Barber met with a Refuſal, it is but juſt I ſend you ſome others, which I carved

on

on my Table, when I was rid of my Beard. They were conceived in theſe Words:

Signori Secretari
Perche alla voſtra Barba
Mi ſon fatta la Barba,
Voi fate del rumore?
Opetere del Cielo
E che! quivi tra voi non è permeſſe,
Ne pur ſtrapparſi il pelo!

But it's Time to conclude, the Farce is already too long, I begin to be tired with it, and fear it will have the ſame Effect on you: I ought rather to have recollected the Proverb:

Li Jochi ſon belli, quando ſon corti.

To retaliate your Loſs of Time, in the Peruſal of ſo many bad *Italian* Verſes, I ſhall conclude this Letter with a Line or two of good *Latin*, and ſo bid you farewel.

Tu tamen, ô nobis uſu junctiſſime longo,
Pars deſiderii maxima, crede, mei,
Sis noſtri memor.

LETTER VII.

SIR,

THIS is already my ſeventh Letter, tho I am but come to the fourth Month of my Impriſonment. If I go on thus, I very much fear, I ſhall be obliged *centuriam tibi dare*, which will not only prove tedious to you, but likewiſe far exceed my Reckoning. But tell me, dear Sir, what Courſe can I take? For I ſee no Poſſibility of being more conciſe. You, on the one Hand, make preſſing Demands for an exact and circumſtantial Account of what befals me; and the *Muſcovites*, on the other Side, furniſh me daily wlth freſh Adventures. The following is a very ſingular one.

Towards the End of *February*, a Perſon came into my Priſon, who, having ſaluted me in *French*, with a Compliment from Mr. *De L' Iſle* and his Spouſe, laid a Parcel of Linnen, with ſome Wine, and ſeveral other Proviſions, upon my Table. The Joy I felt, at ſeeing a Perſon, with whom I could converſe, was of a ſhort Duration. I had hardly Time, to tell him, how much I was obliged to that Gentleman, and his Lady, for the Kindneſſes I received from them, and, that I was aſhamed to ſee their Generoſity ſo much treſpaſſed upon. The Caſe was this; having given ſome Linnen to the Soldiers, to get it waſhed and mended for me, they had thought proper to carry it to this Lady, who was ſo kind, as to add thereto ſeveral other Things, which ſhe thought I might ſtand in Need of. She had ordered one of her Servants to deliver the Parcel himſelf, being ſenſible, that if it had

had fallen into other Hands, I ſhould have been robbed of a good Part of her Benevolence. You will, Sir, undoubtedly be ſurprized, that the Servant, ſhould be ſuffered to ſpeak to me, and to give me that Parcel, which had not been viſited either by a Secretary, or by any of the Guard. Was I then no longer the ſame Priſoner of State, whoſe Steps were to be narrowly obſerved, and who was to be guarded with the utmoſt Rigour? Was I not the ſame Perſon, whoſe Requeſt for a Barber had been refuſed, and who could not obtain the Liberty of uſing a Knife, or Fork? Yes, I was the ſame, but the grand Motive, which induced the *Muſcovites* to act, on this Occaſion, otherwiſe, with Regard to me, was this. If theſe ſordid Wretches had furniſhed theſe Proviſions, and cauſed my Linnen to be waſhed themſelves, it would have coſt them very near the Value of a Ruble; a Sum which to them appeared conſiderable enough, *ut ſilerent leges*, and they were willing to leave the Care of it to any one, who would be at the Expence. The Truth of what I here affirm, is ſo very certain, that when, in the Sequel, I deſired any Thing, that they thought too dear, I was obliged to have Recourſe to Mrs. *De L'Iſle*, who never failed of ſending her Servant immediately.

This Inſtance may ſerve to give you an Idea of the Sordidneſs of the *Muſcovites*; and at the ſame Time will ſhew you the Neceſſity, I lie under, of deſcending to thoſe Particulars, to give you a perfect Inſight into the Character of the Nation. A different Inducement, or rather a Senſe of Gratitude, prompts me to mention two ſmall Birds, which one of my Guard made me a Preſent of, and no ſooner had I them, than I ſet them at Liberty, to fly about my Room. They ſoon grew familiar, and convinced me, that Man is not the only Creature, endued with Reaſon. With Submiſſion to

the

the Gentlemen of the *Carteſian* Sect, I could by no Means believe them to be meer Pieces of Machinery. I diſcovered in them a Genius, the Faculty of Reaſon, and a certain engaging Carriage, which Men are not Maſters of. I may juſtly ſay, that I was charmed with their Company, and that they gave me many agreeable Hours. They were continually about me, and made me a Thouſand pretty Tenders of their Affection. I may venture to affirm, without being too profuſe in their Praiſe, that many *Muſcovites* are their Inferiours; I mean, with regard to their Reaſon, Manners, and certain Paſſions, which I may call humane, and which I never had the good Fortune to experience in any one of my Guard. This innocent Couple, no longer able to ſee the Brutality of my Attendants, quitted my Priſon at laſt, and left me alone in Captivity. I loved them too well, not to allow them a Place among my Poetical Compoſitions, or to neglect their due Encomium, but I omit it here, to go on to another Subject.

I have already told you, that I carved my Verſes on the Table and Door, and that both were ſoon filled with Fragments of Poetry. Weary of this Amuſement, I reſolved to ſpend my Time ſomewhat more uſefully. I had, as I obſerved above, a *Muſcovite* Almanack, which is a Book of a pretty large Size; and beſides this I had a Pocket Book, and a Silver Pencil. My Almanack lay open before me one Day, when by Chance I diſcovered a Leaf of blank Paper in it, which I reſolved to write upon with my Pencil. I directly made a Trial, and ſucceeded to my Wiſh. I held my Paper to the Light, whenever I deſired to read what I had written, and every Character appeared as diſtinct, as if I had written them with Ink. Thus may a Priſon be ſometimes the Mother of Invention. My miſtruſtful Guard, in the mean Time,

being highly ſurprized, to ſee me thus employed, drew near, from Time to Time, to examine my Actions; but as they ſaw Nothing, but the Blank Paper, and I had neither Pen nor Ink, which were forbidden me, they ſuffered me to go on without Interruption, and I was ſo expeditious, that all the Paper was ſoon filled. There was a large Quantity in my Room: But it was tied up and ſealed, according to the Cuſtom of the Country, and the Soldiers had Orders to take Care of it. I found Means, however, to get ſome of it, without being diſcovered, and laid up ſo good a Store, that I found I had ſufficient to finiſh what I had begun. A Shipwrack unfortunately deprived me of all theſe Memoirs, which would have been excellent Materials for the Hiſtory of my Adventures, and hence it is, that my Letters are ſo dull, and written in ſo incorrect a Stile.

But what will you think of my Temerity, in ſtealing Paper, and breaking open Seals, which, in *Muſcovy*, is looked upon as a capital Crime? As for the Paper, I thought my ſelf entitled to it, to repair the Loſs I had ſuſtained of my own, which I had been robbed of at *Caſan*, and Part of my Cloaths, which they had thought proper to deprive me of. I confeſs, that, had I been diſcovered in breaking open the Seals, it might have fared hard with me: For in *Muſcovy*, you muſt know, every Thing is ſealed, Houſes, Shops, Ware-Houſes, Chambers, Doors and Windows. There is but one Thing, which in this Country it is not cuſtomary to ſeal, tho they do it in *Italy*, where Jealouſy is carried too great a Length. I leave you to gueſs my Meaning. The Manner of ſealing up Papers in *Muſcovy* is very ſingular. They take a little Piece of yellow Wax between their Fingers, which they apply to a twiſted Piece of Packthread, and then put a Seal to it, on which it would be pretty difficult

ficult to diſcern any Impreſſion. You find, however, People every where, who are entruſted with the Care of thoſe Papers, thus negligently ſealed, are very watchful of them. Nothing is more eaſy, in ſpite of all theſe Precautions, than to learn the Secrets of the State. Should ever a fatal Star lead you to an Ambaſſy in *Muſcovy*, you need only previouſly conſult me, and may rely on my pointing out to you the neceſſary Means of being ſoon apprized of them. I ſhall even inſtruct you how to get all the Writings out of the Secretary's Office, and re-place them, without any Danger of being detected. A Glaſs of Brandy, or half a Ruble, are Bribes ſufficient to gain any Clerk in the Office.

The Soldiers on Guard are ſeldom over careful in the Diſcharge of their Duty: They are almoſt always ſnoring, never acquainted with their Orders, and ever ready to ſubmit to the firſt that are given them, by any one. But what is yet worſe, theſe Wretches are inceſſantly Drunk, which gives Occaſion to continual Quarrels, and to that Diſorder, which reigns among them. I have frequently ſeen, at one Time, half a Dozen Clerks in Irons, for Neglect of Duty, which nevertheleſs could not put a ſtop to their indecent Mirth. Iron is very cheap in *Muſcovy*, and for the leaſt Neglect, the guilty Perſon is ſo loaded with it, that he cannot ſtir.

In the mean Time, I was buried in Oblivion, and my Releaſement ſeemed to be no longer thought of. As I was determined to ſtrive, by all the Means I could invent, to effect my Deliverance from this unhappy State, I reſolved to write a Petition to the Miniſters. For this I made uſe of a little Pen, which I fixed at the End of my Pencil. This happily ſucceeded, without the Privity of my Guard; and I may ſay, that I often ſhewed them, *Candida de nigris, & de candentibus atra.* One need not be a Conjurer, to impoſe on theſe People. In

In my Petition to the Miniſters, I humbly entreated them, as I had been ſo long impriſoned, without being able to conceive the Motives of ſo rigorous and tedious a Detention, to allow me, at leaſt, to draw up my Vindication in Writing. If I was found guilty, I willingly ſubmitted to the Forfeiture of my Life; but in Caſe I appeared innocent, as I hoped to convince them I was, I begged they would uſe their Intereſt with her Majeſty for my Releaſement. The next Difficulty, after I had drawn up this Petition, was, to convey it to the Hands of the Miniſters, which was no very eaſy Matter. I knew not, at that Time, whether thoſe Gentlemen muſt be directly applied to. I had indeed often heard of Secretaries and Senators; but I perſiſted ſtill, that my Affairs were only cogniſable before Empreſs and her Miniſters. The Diſdain, I had, on ſeveral Occaſions, expreſſed for the Senate, did, perhaps, protract my Captivity. But I could never prevail upon my ſelf to change my Sentiments on that Head, and even, when my Miſery drew towards a Criſis, I implored the Protection of the *Czarina* only, without making the leaſt mention of the Senate, or the Council.

Tantum licentiæ dabat innocentia.

As I did not immediately meet with an Opportunity of preſenting my Petition, I prepared, in the mean Time, for the Execution of a freſh Project. I had, for ſome Time, been troubled with a Rheum in my Head, and, as my *Eau des Carmes* was locked up in my Trunk, I reſolved to get it open, in order to come at ſome. The Matter at firſt appeared not very eaſy, by reaſon of the Padlock and Seal, neither of which I durſt venture to touch. Having, in the mean Time, narrowly viewed the Trunk, it appeared to be made only of ſeveral

Planks

Planks, joined together without Nails, and that by the Help of a Piece of Iron I might eaſily take one of them off. This, therefore, or ſomething like it, was my next Want, which I ſupplied in the following Manner. Seeing my Guard very buſy one Day at making a Fire in the Stove, and taking great Pains to cut little Pieces of Wood with their Swords, I told them, that an Ax would be much more convenient for that Purpoſe; and that they ſhould endeavour to procure one. They had Senſe enough, on that Occaſion, to apprehend, that I was in the right, but replied, that I muſt demand that Utenſil of the Sergeant. As I was not the beſt ſatisfied with this Officer, who now never came near me, I anſwered, he was a Raſcal, and that I deſired to have nothing to do with him. I gave them, at the ſame Time, half a Ruble, and ordered them to go and buy an Ax. I was ſoon obeyed; for they ſtick at nothing, when Money is in the Caſe. Be pleaſed likewiſe here to obſerve the Folly of my Guard. I ſhould without fail have met with a Refuſal, had I demanded a Knife or Fork, and yet they buy an Ax and entruſt it in my Hands, without Difficulty. You will, perhaps, aſk, whence proceeds this Difference? Becauſe the Ax was not ſpecified in their Bede-roll. It was not one of thoſe Things, I had been denied the Uſe of; and it was beſides to be of Service to themſelves. But as the Fear of my cutting my Throat induced them to refuſe me a Knife, had they not the ſame Room to apprehend I might ſplit my Scull with the Ax, or employ it againſt them, if an Opportunity offered? Hence you may judge of the Perverſeneſs of the *Muſcovites*.

I ſhall now tell you, in what Manner I executed both the Projects I had formed. If I miſtake not, it was on the 18th of *March*. But ſince I mention the 18th Day, I muſt take Notice of an Obſerva-

tion I made, which appears to me pretty ſingular. Have you not, in the Peruſal of my Letters, found that all the remarkable Epochs of my Adventures happened preciſely on that Day? I was carried to the *Czarina's* Palace on the 18th of *December*: It was the 18th of *January*, when I was allowed to write, and, in the Sequel, you will find, that the moſt remarkable Adventures I met with, always happened on the 18th Day of the Month. I wiſh ſome one could account for this Phenomenon. The Number 9 has, I know, beeen formerly regarded by all Nations as a myſterious Number, for which they have always had a great Veneration: Whether our modern Cabaliſts are ſtill of the ſame Opinion, I know not; but, in Regard to the Number 18, I never heard, that it had any myſterious Meaning, and aſſure you, that to me the Diſcovery is entirely new. Can you imagine this to be the bare Effect of Chance? It will not be foreign to my Subject, here to obſerve, that the *Muſcovites*, who are ſuperſtitious even to an Exceſs, have always endeavoured to improve the extravagant Fancies of the Ancients, and hence it is, that, of two nines, they have made one 18.

The 18th of *March* was the Day, on which I was ordered to be carried to another Priſon. As I feared this Removal would deprive me of an Opportunity of preſenting my Petition, in the Manner I had propoſed, the News of it gave me ſome Uneaſineſs. My Departure was ſo very abrupt, that they allowed me no Time to make many Reflections, and I was obliged to take *Conſilium in arena*. I was eſcorted by a Troop of Soldiers, and by my Guard, headed by their Sergeant. No ſooner was I brought into a Chamber, crowded with People, than I pulled my Petition out of my Pocket, and crying out aloud, that every one might hear me, gave it to the Sergeant of my Guard, charging him to carry

ry it immediately to the *Czarina's* Council. A ſuperior Officer, who was probably in ſome neighbouring Chamber, terrified at the Noiſe, inſtantly appeared, and being informed of the Occaſion, took it, and carried it into the Chamber, where the Senate was aſſembled. After my Petition was delivered, I was for retiring, but they forced was to wait a Quarter of an Hour longer; and the Officer, in the mean Time, returning, gave me my Papers back again, and would force me to take them. Enraged at the Fellow's Obſtinacy, and having before had Reaſon to be diſſatisfied with him, I gave him a Blow on the Hand, which cauſed the Paper to fall on the Ground, and then leaving the Place abruptly, threatned him with Her Imperial Majeſty's Diſpleaſure, if he refuſed to convey the Petition to her Hands.

On my Arrival in my new Priſon, I ſet about the Project I had formed, of opening my Trunk, and taking from thence what I moſt wanted. To ſucceed the better, I gave my Guard ſome Employment, and for my Part, I was buſied in making a Cage for my Birds. Thus was I working, Ax in Hand, to cut a Plank, which I had laid upon my Trunk. You may eaſiy ſuppoſe, that, at Times, I applied my Axe to my Trunk, to open it, and conſequently that all my Blows were not ſpent on that Plank. My Guard ſupplied me with what other Tools I ſtill ſtood in Need of, and, with their Help, I ſoon compaſſed my Ends. Having thrown my Cloak-Bag, and ſome other Things, on the Trunk, I ſlid off the Plank, which I had looſened, and immediately took out the *Eau des Carmes*, and whatever came firſt to Hand. It happened very luckily, that I could fix the Plank in the Manner it was in before, and afterwards, as eaſily, looſen it again, to take out of my Trunk whatever I wanted. Thus was I reſtored to the Poſſeſſion of my own; and could even, in Caſe of Neceſſity, have

armed my ſelf with a Sword and Piſtols, to procure my Liberty. The People, I had to do with, had not Courage enough, to defend themſelves againſt me, and my ſingle Fork ſeemed to me ſufficient, to put three or four *Muſcovites* to the Flight. The World would have an Opinion, very different, from that which *Europe* has for ſome Time entertained of this Nation, were they as well acquainted as I am of their Cowardice.

Having thus delivered my Petition, I waited impatiently for the Reſult of it. No Anſwer was brought that Day, nor the next, but the Day after an Interpreter came into my Chamber, with my Paper in his Hand, and begged I would explain ſeveral Lines, which they had not perfectly underſtood. I ſoon complied with his Requeſt, and he promiſed to give a faithful Account of the Paſſages I had cleared up. The ſame Man returned an Hour afterwards, to ask, what Means I us'd to write that Petition, and whether I had corrupted my Guard, either with Money or Brandy. I anſwered, that I had no Occaſion to have Recourſe to either of thoſe Expedients; that, as I was in a Room, where thirty or more Clerks were employed, I had not found it difficult to procure Ink, a Pen, and ſome Paper, without the Knowledge of my Guard, and that they were not at all privy to it. As the Account, I gave, met with but little Credit, and I was apprehenſive they might puniſh the innocent Soldiers, I reſolved to diſcover the whole Secret. I therefore deſired the Interpreter to let his Maſters know, that for a Fortnight together, I had written with white Characters, that I might be able to write black ones, for one Quarter of an Hour. The Interpreter ſeemed ſatisfied with my Anſwer, and went away to make his Report. He returned once more, half an Hour afterwards, to ask me, how I had done to ſeal my Petition. I ſhewed him, for his

Satisfac-

Satisfaction, ſome Wax I had in my Pocket, with the two Seals hanging at my Watch. Notwithſtanding my preſſing Entreaties to ſpeak to this Interpreter again, I could never, from that Time, have the Pleaſure of ſeeing him.

The Addition which was now made to the Number of my Guard, and the freſh Orders that were given to interrupt all my Proceedings, occaſioned me to think, that, after a Conſultation was held on my Affairs, it was thought neceſſary that my Actions ſhould be more narrowly watched. My only Comfort, on this Occaſion, was, that I could enjoy more Peace, and had a larger Room for my Priſon. I could not, however, account, for the Behaviour of the Miniſters, with regard to me. I had now been confined four Months at *Peterſburg*, and my Enlargement was not yet thought of. After many Reflections on the State of my Affairs, I fancied, that the Intention I had declared, of ſerving in *Perſia*, under the Prince of *Heſſe-Homburg*, had perhaps given the Miniſters Room for ſome Suſpicions. And as that Prince had no Thoughts himſelf of going into that Country, till ſome Uneaſineſs put him upon it, this Notion appeared to be the better grounded. As, on the other Hand, the fundamental Maxim of the *Muſcovite* Government conſiſts in truſting nobody, and in believing all Mankind to be capable of the moſt villainous Attempts, I had Reaſon to ſuppoſe, that they only detained me ſo long Priſoner, to inform themſelves of the real Motive of my Voyage. Or perhaps, in the preſent Juncture of Affairs, in *Europe*, they took me for an Emiſſary of *France*, or of King *Staniſlaus*. I am however, not conſcious of having done or ſaid any thing, that could raiſe ſuch a Suſpicion, and my Behaviour in *Muſcovy* was very much unlike that of a Perſon entruſted with ſecret Commiſſions: I was, nevertheleſs, ſome Time after, informed, that

I was taken for a Spy of King *Staniſlaus*, though I never had the Honour of knowing that Prince, or being at all known to him. But let us leave theſe Conjectures, which may lead me too far: And inſtead thereof, let me inform you of what paſſed in my new Habitation.

After having opened my Trunk, and taken out of it what I thought neceſſary, I reſolved to make no longer Uſe of a wooden Fork, which had been given me, nor to be obliged to borrow a Knife, to cut my Victuals; but made a Shew of my great Fork, and of a Knife, which I had taken out of my Trunk. My Guard ſeemed ſurprized at the Sight of theſe Things, and I wondered no leſs to ſee them profoundly ſilent. From thence I inferred, that they no longer feared my cutting my Throat, and that all their Care was, to hinder me from writing again. They gave me the Pleaſure of ſeeing them, every Day, viſit the Seals of my Trunk, to know whether I had tried to open it. By my frequent Repreſentations, how neceſſary it was to have a conſtant Eye on thoſe Seals, I even invited them to make that Viſit. Thus, after I had tricked them, they ſerved for Objects of my Ridicule. I was taken up with this Amuſement one Part of the Day, and ſpent the Remainder of my Time in looking over the *Muſcovite* Almanack, which was the only Book, I had left. I was one Day peruſing the Liſt of the Potentates of *Europe*, and read, with ſome Surprize, the Name of *Auguſtus* III. as King of *Poland*. This News occaſioned me to form various Conjectures, and gave me a very eager Deſire of knowing what had paſſed. I no longer doubted but that the War was kindled in *Poland*, and found, at the ſame Time, that the Perſon, from whom I had received my chief Intelligence, ſince my Arrival at *Peterſburg*, muſt be perfectly well acquainted with the Deſigns and Projects of the Court of

Ruſſia. This Perſon, whom, I believe, I mentioned before, had not a little contributed to my taking the Reſolution of going into *Perſià*. I had long before ſuſpected, that he reſided at *Peterſburg* on Account of ſome ſecret and important Affair, which Suſpicion was afterwards confirmed by freſh Proofs, and ſuch, as ſuffered me no longer to doubt of the Truth of my Conjecture. As he was well acquainted with whatever paſſed at the Court of *Ruſſia*, he appeared to me the more proper to diſcharge his Commiſſion.

Tho it was with Aſtoniſhment I heard, that King *Auguſtus* had acceeded to the Throne of *Poland*, yet I was not ignorant that the *Muſcovites* would uſe their utmoſt Efforts, to effect the Excluſion of King *Staniſlaus*; but I could hardly perſuade my ſelf, they would ever have ſucceeded. The great Influence the *Ruſſian* Court at preſent has, in the Affairs of *Europe*, does really ſurprize me, and is what I cannot ſufficiently repeat to you. The World has formed of this Monarchy a Notion of Power, which exiſts only in the Fancies of thoſe, who have no Knowledge of it. *Ruſſia* is, I muſt own, of a vaſt Extent, and I even believe, that neither *Europe*, nor the *Indies*, nor any other Part of the World, contains a Country in that Point equal to it. You may judge of this by its Length, if you conſider the Diſtance between *Riga*, and the *Eaſtern* Extremity of the Continent of *Kamtſchatki*, lately diſcovered; and by the Latitude of it, which extends from the Province of *Gilan*, on the *Southern* Coaſts of the *Caſpian* Sea, to the Streights of *Naſſau*. The prodigious Extent of this Empire, muſt neceſſarily be a Burthen to it, and renders it (if I may be allowed the Expreſſion) heavy and unfit for Motion. If, on the other Hand, we enter into a particular Account of the Parts, of which it is compoſed, we meet with immenſe Deſarts,

ſarts, Marſhes without End, and very large Foreſts. It will, therefore, upon an exact Calculation, be found, that *Germany* contains twice as many Inhabitants as *Muſcovy*. To this add the Puſillanimity of the *Muſcovites*, who are by no Means a People to be dreaded by other Nations.

Nam ſi homines, vix ſunt homines hoc nomine digni.

Were we to give Credit to what is inſerted in certain Gazettes, I know, we ſhould have Room to believe, that the *Muſcovites* have actually formidable Armies on foot, conſiſting of regular Troops. But believe me, Sir, thoſe Reports are entirely groundleſs, and only fit to ſeduce the unknowing Part of Mankind. I wiſh they would ſhew me, where all theſe Troops are. In the Year 1733, I ſaw the State of the *Muſcovite* Troops, and if they amount at preſent to 100,000 Men, they muſt have been conſiderably augmented. But, ſuppoſing, that there is actually at preſent that Number of regular Troops in *Muſcovy*, muſt they not neceſſarily be divided and diſtributed into ſeveral Places? You are not ignorant of the indiſpenſible Neceſſity they lye under, of keeping always a pretty large Body in *Perſia*, and that a Removal of them from that Country, even in Time of Peace, would be attended with ſome Danger. The *Perſians* have of late been pretty well experienced in War, and, ſhould they happen to make Peace with the *Turks*, *Koulikan* would, without doubt, undertake the Conqueſt of thoſe fine Provinces, which the *Muſcovites* have, by Uſurpation, made themſelves Maſters of. What ought we to think of this Behaviour of the *Muſcovites*, with Regard to the *Perſians*? Under the ſpecious Pretence of lending their Aid to a King, oppreſſed by a rebellious Subject, they enter the Country, where they are received like generous Friends, and at the

ſame

ſame Time treacherouſly ſeize whatever they think moſt commodious for them.

Beſides the Body of Troops, which the *Muſcovites* cannot avoid maintaining in *Perſia*, they are obliged to keep another on Foot in the Kingdom of *Aſtracan*, which is ſurrounded by *Tartars*, who are Neighbours they have always Reaſon to be apprehenſive of. The Troubles, that Kingdom was ſo lately involved in, are ſtill freſh in every one's Memory. An handful of Men ſpread a general Confuſion, and made terrible Ravages there. Another Motive, that muſt induce the *Muſcovites* to keep Troops in the Kingdom of *Aſtracan*, is, becauſe the *Tartars* of *Baſkir*, and thoſe of *Uffi*, who were antient Poſſeſſors of this Country, might otherwiſe riſe in Rebellion, ſome Time or other, and revenge themſelves on the *Ruſſians*. During my ſtay at *Caſan*, I had an Opportunity of ſeeing ſome of that Nation, and if we may judge by their Phiſiognomy, they do not ſeem deſtined to bow their Necks long to the *Muſcovite* Yoke. But let us go back, and ſtop at the River *Don*, where the *Koban Tartars*, who are not far diſtant from thence, make frequent Incurſions, and very much moleſt the *Muſcovites*. If thoſe People are not kept in awe, they may certainly penetrate as far as *Weronezt*, and venture at laſt on ſome important Enterprize to ſuccour their Brethren, the *Crim-Tartars*. If we go on into the *Ukraine*, we ſhall find, that Country cannot remain long in the Hands of the *Ruſſians*, unleſs it be ſecured by a conſiderable Body of good Troops. In thoſe Parts the *Muſcovites* muſt have a watchful Eye over the Motions of the *Turks*, the *Crim* and *Budziack-Tartars*, and even of the *Coſacks*, who may, ſoon or late, riſe in Arms, and, as they have formerly done, withdraw their Allegiance.

Thus you ſee, that, if the *Muſcovites* maintain, as they muſt do, a Body of regular Troops, in each

of

ſarts, Marſhes without End, and very large Foreſts. It will, therefore, upon an exact Calculation, be found, that *Germany* contains twice as many Inhabitants as *Muſcovy*. To this add the Puſillanimity of the *Muſcovites*, who are by no Means a People to be dreaded by other Nations.

Nam ſi homines, vix ſunt homines hoc nomine digni.

Were we to give Credit to what is inſerted in certain Gazettes, I know, we ſhould have Room to believe, that the *Muſcovites* have actually formidable Armies on foot, conſiſting of regular Troops. But believe me, Sir, thoſe Reports are entirely groundleſs, and only fit to ſeduce the unknowing Part of Mankind. I wiſh they would ſhew me, where all theſe Troops are. In the Year 1733, I ſaw the State of the *Muſcovite* Troops, and if they amount at preſent to 100,000 Men, they muſt have been conſiderably augmented. But, ſuppoſing, that there is actually at preſent that Number of regular Troops in *Muſcovy*, muſt they not neceſſarily be divided and diſtributed into ſeveral Places? You are not ignorant of the indiſpenſible Neceſſity they lye under, of keeping always a pretty large Body in *Perſia*, and that a Removal of them from that Country, even in Time of Peace, would be attended with ſome Danger. The *Perſians* have of late been pretty well experienced in War, and, ſhould they happen to make Peace with the *Turks*, *Koulikan* would, without doubt, undertake the Conqueſt of thoſe fine Provinces, which the *Muſcovites* have, by Uſurpation, made themſelves Maſters of. What ought we to think of this Behaviour of the *Muſcovites*, with Regard to the *Perſians*? Under the ſpecious Pretence of lending their Aid to a King, oppreſſed by a rebellious Subject, they enter the Country, where they are received like generous Friends, and at the

ſame

ſame Time treacherouſly ſeize whatever they think moſt commodious for them.

Beſides the Body of Troops, which the *Muſcovites* cannot avoid maintaining in *Perſia*, they are obliged to keep another on Foot in the Kingdom of *Aſtracan*, which is ſurrounded by *Tartars*, who are Neighbours they have always Reaſon to be apprehenſive of. The Troubles, that Kingdom was ſo lately involved in, are ſtill freſh in every one's Memory. An handful of Men ſpread a general Confuſion, and made terrible Ravages there. Another Motive, that muſt induce the *Muſcovites* to keep Troops in the Kingdom of *Aſtracan*, is, becauſe the *Tartars* of *Baſkir*, and thoſe of *Uffi*, who were antient Poſſeſſors of this Country, might otherwiſe riſe in Rebellion, ſome Time or other, and revenge themſelves on the *Ruſſians*. During my ſtay at *Caſan*, I had an Opportunity of ſeeing ſome of that Nation, and if we may judge by their Phiſiognomy, they do not ſeem deſtined to bow their Necks long to the *Muſcovite* Yoke. But let us go back, and ſtop at the River *Don*, where the *Koban Tartars*, who are not far diſtant from thence, make frequent Incurſions, and very much moleſt the *Muſcovites*. If thoſe People are not kept in awe, they may certainly penetrate as far as *Weronezt*, and venture at laſt on ſome important Enterprize to ſuccour their Brethren, the *Crim-Tartars*. If we go on into the *Ukraine*, we ſhall find, that Country cannot remain long in the Hands of the *Ruſſians*, unleſs it be ſecured by a conſiderable Body of good Troops. In thoſe Parts the *Muſcovites* muſt have a watchful Eye over the Motions of the *Turks*, the *Crim* and *Budziack-Tartars*, and even of the *Coſacks*, who may, ſoon or late, riſe in Arms, and, as they have formerly done, withdraw their Allegiance.

Thus you ſee, that, if the *Muſcovites* maintain, as they muſt do, a Body of regular Troops, in each

of

of thoſe Places, and eſpecially in *Perſia*, and the *Ukraine*, their Army of an hundred thouſand Men, will be reduced to a very ſmall Number. To theſe you may add the Troops, which are actually in *Poland*; 30,000 Men, which they are to ſend to the *Emperor*'s Aid on the *Rhine*, and laſtly the numerous Garriſons, which muſt neceſſarily be kept in moſt of thoſe Places, which have been taken from *Sweden*. But, ſuppoſing, that the *Muſcovites* had really as many Troops, as they are ſaid to have, where will they find Money to pay them? The Revenues of that vaſt Monarchy do not amount to above ten or twelve thouſand Crowns. How is it poſſible, with a Sum ſo inconſiderable, to maintain 3, or 400,000 Men by Land, and, beſides this, a formidable Fleet at Sea?

Theſe Particulars may ſerve to ſhew, that I am not miſtaken, in exclaiming againſt the Rumour ſpread in *Europe*, of the Power of this Nation. The Gazetteers are excuſable, as they publiſh thoſe Reports on a Miſ-Information; but what Judgement can we form of the *Muſcovites*, who, tho thoroughly acquainted with the State of their Affairs, the Number and Quality of their Troops, and the Weakneſs of their Finances, dare to attempt the Execution of the Projects now on the Carpet? Believe me, Sir, and give me leave to repeat it once more, that they will never obtain the Ends they have in View: *

Spes improbiſſimas complectuntur inſperata aſſecuti.

What Projects the *Muſcovites* may have formed for this Campaign, I am wholly ignorant of; but this I know, that they were the laſt Year obliged, for the Reinforcement of their Troops, to draw all they

(*) They ſeem, however, to bid very fair for it, at this time.

had from their Inland-Countries; Inſomuch, that none but Invalids remained at *Muſcow*, tho a conſiderable Body always us'd to be kept on Foot there. At *Peterſburg* remained only the Guards and two Battalions of Peaſants, juſt taken from behind their Ovens; hence it was, that the Number of the ordinary Guards could not be compleated, and that even mine was leſſened, for I was left in the Hands of three Men, who were not relieved in near two Months.

Their Manner of doing Duty in *Muſcovy* is pretty ſingular. Thoſe, who, like me, have been Eye-Witneſſes, may have an Idea of the Troops of this Country, and of the Officers, who command them. A Soldier on Duty never knows when he is to be relieved, and, as for the Officers, they are generally ignorant of the firſt Rudiments of War, which thoſe of other Countries are ſo well acquainted with. A Centinel very ſeldom executes the Orders, he receives from his Sergeant. They never heſitate at placing a drunken Soldier on Duty; and frequently a whole Guard, Officers, as well as Soldiers, are drunk, and incapable of attending their Duty. Nothing is more common, than to ſee a mutinous Soldier fall to Blows with his Sergeant, and the latter is often obliged to put up with them, without daring to complain. The Quarrels which happen every Day among the Officers or the Soldiers, are never terminated otherways, than by Fiſty-Cuffs, or Cudgels; for there is a Law in *Muſcovy*, as I obſerved in a former Letter, whereby the Subjects are forbid to draw their Swords, which Law is always moſt religiouſly obſerved. The only Thing, which appears laudable, is, that theſe Troops are never ſuffered to be idle, and at *Peterſburg* I remember to have ſeen fifteen Battalions employed at a Time, and not a ſingle Man remaining at the Corps de Garde. Guards are placed every where,

and

and there is not the leaſt thing done without ſuch a Security. Foreign Miniſters, of what Rank ſoever they be, never fail of being attended by ſome of them. You may judge, after this, how ſafely their Money muſt be guarded in *Muſcovy*. I aſſure you, that a Commiſſioner, who has only a dozen Bags of Copper-Money in his Cheſt, will at leaſt have a Guard of ſix Men. Such is the Employment of the greater Part of a large Garriſon, whilſt the reſt are continually occupied in cleaving and cutting Wood for their Fuel. This they call keeping their Troops in Exerciſe, and always ready for Battle, and imagine they are performing Wonders!

I could enlarge farther on this Subject, but fear this Letter is already too long. I muſt therefore conclude, Sir, tho I do it with Reluctance, aſſuring you, that I am, and ſhall always be, wholly Yours,

Dum memor ipſe mei, dum ſpiritus hos regit artus.

LETTER VIII.

SIR,

YOU very juſtly cenſure the Stile of my Letters; the Faults are as viſible to me as to you, but I do not find it ſo eaſy to avoid them. The Reaſons I told you before, which you cannot be ignorant of. My Condition will not allow me to be very nice in the Choice of my Words, nor to give a juſt Turn to my Periods.

Animum, non carmina jacto.

In

In my laſt I informed you, how I was apprized of the War being kindled in *Poland*, and that King *Auguſtus* had acceeded to the Throne. The ſame Perſon told me, that the *Muſcovites* had inveſted *Dantzick*, and that King *Staniſlaus* was block'd up in that City. As I neglected no Opportunity of learning the publick News, I heard, that Count *Munich* was departed for the Camp before *Dantzick*; that a large Body of Troops was ordered to march from *Poland*; and that all who were at *Muſcow*, were to come to *Peterſburg*. Orders were even ſent to my Guard, to prepare for a March, which I found they were not the beſt pleaſed with. They were continually obſerving, that a bloody War would ſoon enſue, that a large Body of *French* Troops was already arrived in *Poland*, and preparing to march directly to *Moſcow*. In vain I repreſented to them the Impoſſibility of it, by Reaſon of the vaſt Diſtance the *French* are at, they perſiſted this News was but too true, and that I ought no longer to doubt it. By their Diſcourſe, I perceived, how much they were afraid of coming to blows with the *French*. You muſt know, the Warriors in *Muſcovy* all equally wiſh for Peace, and that no one here is a Soldier by Inclination. They ingenuouſly confeſs their Averſion to War, and that, were they not forced to enter into military Service, they would never do it voluntarily. If the Officers themſelves were allowed to do it, they would certainly reſign their Poſts. From hence you may judge, what Opinion we ought to have of theſe Troops.

The Intelligence I received from my Guard ſerved only to encreaſe my Deſire of hearing more News; but nothing appeared ſo difficult, as to find the Means of ſatisfying my Curioſity. After many Reflections, it came into my Head to ſend for Mr. *De L'Iſle*'s Cook, not doubting, but that

he would give me a thorough Knowledge of every Thing. In order to this, I aſked for ſeveral Things, which I pretended to have urgent Occaſion for, and for which I knew my Guard would not diſburſe any Money. This ſucceeded to my Wiſh. They went immediately to Mr. *De L'Iſle*, who inſtantly ſent his Cook with all I aſked for. I acquainted this Man with my earneſt Deſire of ſeeing him, to be informed of the Poſture of Affairs in *Europe*, and begged he would viſit me frequently, to impart to me all he might learn. He promiſed faithfully to gratify my Deſire, and he was as good as his Word.

By this Means, I was informed of many Things, ſome of which were agreeable, while others gave me Uneaſineſs. The Affection I always bore to Arms revived in me, when I found War declared on all Hands, and this, at the ſame Time, made me more ſenſibly feel the Weight of my Miſeries. But with Pleaſure I heard, that the *French* had diſtinguiſhed themſelves from the Beginning of the War, and the Progreſs, they had made, did, I muſt own, far exceed my Hopes. I remember to have ſaid, in a former Converſation with you, that as the Enemies of *France* could not gain their Ends by a War, they were endeavouring to ſubdue that Nation by a Peace. My Conjectures were groundleſs, and it is with Joy I find my ſelf miſtaken. Who would ever have thought, that what is the general Cauſe of the Decay, and total Subverſion, of the moſt powerful States, could never produce either of thoſe fatal Effects in *France*? Were Luxury and Indolence ever carried to ſo great an Exceſs in any Country in the Univerſe, as in this very Kingdom? The *French*, in the mean Time, ſo immerged in Voluptuouſneſs, thoſe illuſtrious Youths ſo intent upon the Finery of their Attire, and ſo attached to the Purſuit of their Pleaſures, have given the moſt evident Proofs of

their

their Valour and Bravery, at the Battles of *Parma* and *Guaſtalla*, and at the Siege of *Philipſburg*. They may juſtly be ſaid to have ſhewn a Prodigy of Valour, and to have acted like Heroes. This Phenomenon is extraordinary, and perhaps without a Precedent. The Reflections I have made on this Subject would lead me too far from my main Deſign, ſhould I undertake to communicate them all to you.

My Thoughts were not however ſo wholly taken up with the News I heard in my Priſon, to hinder me from conſidering ſeriouſly how to procure my Liberty.

A Month was now paſs'd, ſince I preſented my Petition, and I had as yet received no Anſwer. I ſeemed to be buried in Oblivion, and the Miniſters appeared reſolved to let me die in Slavery. They continued to treat me with unprecedented Rigour, and I could neither obtain an Interpreter, nor Permiſſion to ſpeak to the Miniſters. Whatever Requeſt I made was ſure to meet with a Refuſal. I eſteemed it a great Piece of Injuſtice, that they ſo obſtinately denied to ſee the Reaſons I had to offer in my Juſtification.

As I had ſome Room to think, that the Gentlemen of the Senate had intercepted my Petition, I reſolved to draw up another. The Execution of this Project was attended with ſome Difficulty by Reaſon of the Orders, which had been given, narrowly to watch my Motions, and of the Number of my Guard which had been augmented. This could not however diſcourage me from purſuing my Deſign. I entruſted my Petition, after I had ſealed it, to two Sergeants, whom I charged to carry it inſtantly to the *Czarina*'s Council. An officious young Fellow, who came almoſt every Minute into my Chamber, to ſee whether my Guards had a ſtrict Eye over me, was greatly ſurprized, when he ſaw, that I had found Means of writing without being perceived by any one. He ſwore and made a terrible Uproar, threatning my Guard

that they ſhould be puniſhed for their Negligence. They aſſured him, with horrid Imprecations, that they were not privy to it. After a long Conſultation they took my Petition at laſt, and promiſed to execute the Commiſſion faithfully. The Sergeants returned, notwithſtanding this Promiſe, in half an Hour, and gave my Paper to the Soldier who was on Duty, with a reiterated Charge, not to ſuffer me to write any more. This ill Succeſs did not diſhearten me. My Guard, on their Part, doubled their Attention, and even endeavoured to ſurprize me by Stratagems. They pretended to be aſleep and watched me through their Cloaks, with which they cover'd their Heads.

This Scene was comical enough, and afforded me much Diverſion. I was extreamly delighted to ſee them fall from a feigned Sleep into a real and profound one. I cannot conceive how they came to think of this Expedient. For the *Muſcovites*, of all People, are the moſt expert in the Art of Sleeping. I may venture to ſay, that of all the Nations I know, not one is ſo ſubject to Sleep, as the *Muſcovites* are. Not contented with the Night, which, in the Winter-Seaſon, is very long, in their Country, they take, throughout the whole Year, an Afternoon's Nap, of ſeveral Hours. This Cuſtom is common to every *Muſcovite*, and 'tis that probably, which makes them ſo ſtupid. The whole Life of a Soldier is ſpent in Eating and Sleeping. They even indulge themſelves in the latter, whilſt they are on Duty. The Time of their ſtanding Centry, which is for ſix Hours together, is indeed, too long. When an Officer ſurprizes a Soldier aſleep, which I have frequently ſeen, he does not make a Crime of it; but only awakens him, by ſaying, How now, Centry? Are you aſleep? How the *Muſcovite* Soldiers behave in the Field, I know not; but moſt certain it is, that they can never

never forbear ſlumbering, if they are ſeveral Hours on Duty. You need not, therefore, wonder, if I could impoſe upon my Guard, and find all the Time requiſite, to write a new Petition, without their Knowledge. After having drawn ſeveral Copies, I ſealed them, and threw them out of the Window, into a Place, where I ſaw a great Thorow-fare. Theſe Papers were directed to the Empreſs herſelf, but I could never find, that any Thing came of them. This is common in *Muſcovy*, where it is difficult to obtain Juſtice. *Hos ſcelerum ritus.*

I cannot, with any Certainty, impute this to any particular Perſon. Shall I accuſe the Cabinet-Council or the Members of the Senate? I have Room to believe them all equally guilty, and the Uſage I have met with at their Hands, but too plainly proves it. The Reaſons that induce me to attribute it to them, are theſe: The Petition, which I ſent my ſelf, as Priſoner of State, to Her Imperial Majeſty's Council, was either intercepted, or communicated to the Miniſters. If you ſuppoſe it to have fallen into their Hands, may I not reaſonably accuſe them of the greateſt Injuſtice, as they would neither give Ear to my oral Remonſtrances, nor permit me to write? But, if my Petition was intercepted, may I not conclude, that the Miniſtry is under no fixed Regulation? Since I was looked upon as a Perſon, entruſted with ſome Commiſſion, dangerous to the State, my Petition might be preſumed to contain ſome Affairs of the greateſt Importance. It being, on the other Hand, directed to the Empreſs herſelf, how durſt they preſume to open and intercept it? A Proceeding of this Kind can never be in any Nation, where all Laws, divine and human, are not trod under Foot. In ſo unhappy a Situation, my Uneaſineſs was beyond Expreſſion. Thus confined in a Priſon, where

I was uſed like the moſt vile of Men, I knew not what Means to have Recourſe to, to procure my Releaſement. *Quæ res in ſe neque conſilium, neque modum habet ullum, eam conſilio regere non potes.*

As I was not ſo rigid a Stoic, as to reſolve upon ſpending the Remainder of my Days in a Priſon, a Deſire after Liberty prompted me to think of new Expedients to free my ſelf from Slavery. I ſoon formed another Scheme, the Execution of which appeared to me very eaſy. This was, to kill one of my Guard, who always accompanied me alone to an Apartment, whither I went to eaſe Nature. I continued to think ſeriouſly of executing this Deſign, as deſperate as it was. My Sword was, as I mentioned before, at my own Diſpoſal, and nothing ſeemed to me leſs difficult, than to make my Eſcape from my Priſon, after having given the Blow. The only Obſtacle, I ſaw, was, how to find a Place in the City to which I might ſafely retire. I might, in any other Country have relied on a Protection in the Houſe of a foreign Miniſter, in which I could ſecurely have taken Refuge; but I knew the *Muſcovites* too well, not to be acquainted how light they make of the Law of Nations. I reſolved, however, as I was deſtitute of any other Means, to retire to the Houſe of the *Pruſſian* Envoy, where I propoſed more Safety to my ſelf, than any where elſe. All Matters were already diſpoſed for an Enterprize ſo dangerous, and ſo different from the many others, I had, in vain, attempted, when I begun ſeriouſly to reflect on the Action, and upon ſecond Thoughts reſolved to delay it for ſome Time. I was ſhocked at the bare Thought of killing a Man in cold Blood, and proteſt, that, had not the Uneaſineſs cauſed in me by ſo long an Impriſonment, and by the bad Treatment, I met with, from the *Muſcovites*, compelled me to it, I ſhould never have formed ſuch a Deſign. I therefore thought it my Duty, patiently

to

to bear the Weight of my Miſeries, and to ſtay for ſome other Opportunity of recovering my Liberty, without being obliged to commit a Crime, and without running the Hazard, I was going to expoſe my ſelf to.

I received, in the mean Time, frequent Intelligences of what paſſed at the Siege of *Dantzick*. I was informed by my Guard, that their Countrymen ſtrove by all poſſible Means to make themſelves Maſters of that City, and that they hoped to put an End to the War, by ſeizing the Perſon of King *Staniſlaus*. I could not be prevailed on, as I knew the *Muſcovite* Troops, to believe, that they would ever bring about an Enterprize of that Kind. I imagined, beſides, that, if the City ſhould not be in a Condition of being defended, it would infallibly be relieved with formidable Succours, and thereby the *Muſcovites* be obliged to retreat. I was told, that *Sweden* was equipping a conſiderable Fleet, and that a large Body of Troops was forming in *Finland*. This Step, ſaid to have been taken by *Sweden*, appeared to me very reaſonable, and I had many Inducements to make me give Credit to theſe Intelligences. And the *Swedes* could in Reality not meet with a more favourable Opportunity, of retrieving the Loſſes they had ſuſtained, and revenging themſelves on the *Muſcovites*. Nothing could, in my Opinion, at that Time, be attended with leſs difficulty than the Execution of this Project. The *Swedes*, needed only to march directly to *Wibourg*, and I am well aſſured, that at the firſt Rumour of it at *Peterſburg*, that Capital would ſoon have been abandoned, and the whole Court have retired to *Muſcovy*.

What I here advance is pretty well founded, and I even believe, Sir, it is the only and beſt Means that could be taken. My Reaſons are theſe: The *Muſcovites* had, at the Time I am ſpeaking of, only

eight or ten Battalions, and one Regiment of Cavalry, to oppoſe the *Swedes*; for herein conſiſted all that remained for the *Czarina*'s Guard. Had I not, therefore, Room to think, that a Step like this ought to be taken by *Sweden?* I had formed ſuch pleaſing Hopes of their ſucceeding therein, that I had even projected, to be one among them, aſſoon as they ſhould enter *Peterſburg*. The Execution of this Enterprize would not have been very difficult. I might have cleared the Way for my ſelf with my Sword and Piſtols. My Guard were not to be greatly feared; and, had I met with any Reſiſtance from them, I ſhould ſoon have found Means of ſubduing them. My Mind was, during ſome Time, wholly taken up with theſe pleaſing Expectations: I obſerved through the Windows of my Priſon, what paſſed in the City, and when any one came into my Priſon, I could not diſſemble my eager Deſire of hearing News. My Uneaſineſſes all vaniſhed in Hopes of ſeeing this Grand Event. Nothing could have pleaſed me more, than to ſee the *Muſcovites* upon the Point of quitting their Capital, to avoid the Purſuits of an Enemy, juſtly enraged. With Pleaſure I view'd the approaching Moment, when they would be obliged to renounce all their great Enterprizes.

My Conjectures, Sir, proved, however, groundleſs, my Hopes were vain, and the Event has but too plainly demonſtrated, how groſly I was miſtaken. You will undoubtedly ſay, that my Imaginations were at that Time, like thoſe of a Perſon, in the other World. I confeſs, I was deceived, but who would ever have believed, that the Affairs of *Poland* would have turned out to the Advantage of the *Ruſſians?* Am I the only one, who entertained the Notions, I then did? What were your Thoughts, Sir? Could you ever have imagined, that the City of *Dantzick* would ſurrender to the *Muſcovites?*

That

That the *Swedes* would continue inactive? And that all the other Potentates ſhould not make the leaſt Attempt to oppoſe the unjuſt Pretenſions of the *Muſcovites?* I cannot but continue in my Surprize, when I conſider this general Inactivity of the Reſt of the *Northern Princes*. Are then the *Swedes*, who were formerly ſo warlike a People, now degenerated? Could they ever have met with a more favourable Juncture to retrieve their Loſſes? The *Muſcovites* being ſtill the very ſame, as they were in the Times of *Charles* XII, their declared Enemy, they had nothing to fear from that Quarter. Let them but recollect the famous Battle of *Narva*, where a handful of valiant *Swedes*, routed an Army of one Hundred Thouſand *Ruſſians*.

But you will perhaps aſk, is there no Difference between the preſent *Muſcovite* Troops, and thoſe, who fought the Battle of *Narva?* There is, I muſt own, ſome, but let us only examine, wherein it conſiſts. The preſent *Ruſſian* Soldiers are better cloathed, and provided with better Arms than in the laſt War; but they are, in every other Reſpect, ſtill the ſame Men, and have neither more Courage, nor more Experience to boaſt of. Believe me, had the *Swedes* put it to the Trial, the Perdition of the *Muſcovites* would have been inevitable. They were far from being in a Condition to oppoſe an Enemy, by whom they had ſo often been conquered, and, at the ſame Time, carry on a War with the *Poles*. You will, perhaps, object, that Part of the Troops employed at the Siege of *Dantzick*, and ſome of thoſe who were diſperſed in *Poland*, might have been recalled. But, Sir, that Objection can be of no weight with you. All the *Muſcovite* Troops, which are diſperſed in *Poland*, are highly neceſſary there, and, notwithſtanding their large Number, would have been few enough, had not there been Diviſions among the *Poles* themſelves. You may

again

again object, they had another Body of Troops in the *Ukraine*, which they might have recalled, and placed in the Heart of the Empire. But in this Caſe, how would they have been ſafe againſt the *Turks* and *Tartars*, who threatned them with an Invaſion? Let us even ſuppoſe, that they had reſolved to recall thoſe Troops, were they not too far diſtant from the Capital, to arrive in Time, and prevent its ſurrender to the Enemy? All theſe Things induce me to believe, that the *Muſcovites* relied on the Faith of the Treaties, ſubſiſting between them and *Sweden*, and, that they had been aſſured, that no Attempt ſhould be made, contrary to their Intereſts. They ſeem nevertheleſs to have carried their Confidence too far, and a ſtrong Body of Troops, ſent to *Finland*, would have contributed not a little to eſtabliſh their Alliance with *Sweden*, and to ſecure their Frontiers from any Inſult. But the *Muſcovite* Miniſtry probably eſteemed theſe Precautions needleſs, and is undoubtedly ignorant, that *Utcunque ſe res inclinat, ita ambulant foedera.* They are ſo elate on their Proſperity, and their Vanity is ſo excited by a Succeſs, only owing to Chance, that they forget their Intereſts in Matters of the greateſt Importance. *Melius, pejus, proſit, obſit, nil vident, niſi quod lubet.*

I need not expatiate on the Event of this Affair, but be that as it will, it muſt be allowed, that the *Muſcovites* have on this Occaſion expoſed their Sovereign and the whole Nation, to too great a Danger. Had *Sweden* more narrowly watched her Intereſts, *Peterſburg* muſt have yielded to her ſuperior Power, and none of the great Projects, formed by the *Muſcovites*, would have taken Place. The Admiralty of *Peterſburg*, you know, takes Charge of whatever relates to the *Ruſſian* Maritime Affairs. If therefore this Capital had fallen into the Hands of the *Swedes*, of what Uſe would not *Cron-*

ſtadt,

ſtadt, with all the Ships which lye there, have been to them? The taking of this City only, would, I am well aſſured, have been attended by the Loſs of all the Conqueſts the *Muſcovites* have made, and conſequently have driven them back within thoſe Bounds, to which it is the Intereſt of ſeveral Princes, if not of all *Europe*, to confine them. Hence you may ſee, what Danger the *Muſcovites* have expoſed themſelves to by an unheard of Negligence, and by not foreſeeing a Storm, which might have fallen upon, and overwhelmed them. Had the Adminiſtration of Affairs been in the Hands of the native *Muſcovites*, as it is of Foreigners, ſo notorious a Blunder would not have ſurprized me, and I could even have alledged the true Cauſe of ſuch a Procedure.

I believe, I have already, in ſome of my former Letters, obſerved, that the *Muſcovites* could never approve of any of the Regulations made by *Peter* the Great, their Sovereign, and that the moſt honourable Employments are ſuch a Burthen to them, that they never accept of them but with the utmoſt Reluctance. Moſt of them very loudly declare, that the Obligation they are under, of ſerving, be it by Sea, or Land, is only an Addition to their Slavery. In this Way of thinking, which ſhews their Cowardice and Indolence, they look on their Navy, and all the Conqueſts they have made, as the two principal Sources of all the Evils they labour under. They wiſh for nothing ſo earneſtly, as a conſiderable Change in the State, which may ſubvert all the Innovations, and enable them to lead a lazy, inactive Life. Believe me, what I here advance, is far from being a Paradox, for nothing would be eaſier to me than to evince the Truth of it. I remember, that, during the Siege of *Dantzick*, itwas a general Wiſh, with every one, that it might not be taken. The Hatred they bear to the Foreigners,

who

who formed this Project, and especially to him, who was entrusted with the Execution of it, contributed not a little to their being so singular in their Wishes; but the principal Object of their Desires was, for ever to quit a Country, which they greatly abhor, and to return, into their ancient native Country, where they might offer themselves a Sacrifice to Fire and Laziness, their favourite Idols.

You may conclude, Sir, from what I have said, how reasonably my Hopes were founded, of receiving from the *Swedes* an Opportunity of recovering my Liberty. My Disappointment must, therefore, be imputed to my evil Stars, and to the Inactivity of the *Swedes*. Whilst I was flattering my self with these vain Hopes, I happened to think of an Expedient of causing my self to be taken Notice of, and preventing my being buried in eternal Oblivion, which you will think very odd. As I was one Day leaning on my Window, with my Mind employed on a thousand various Thoughts, I saw the *Czarina* at a Distance, with a large Number of Attendants, passing through a Street, which must necessarily lead her close by my Prison. In order to shew my self to that Princess, and to all her Court, I leaned out of the Window, as far as ever I could, and threw up my Morning Gown, which fell into Rags, and could not but excite the Curiosity, of those, who saw it. I know not, whether the Empress perceived me, as she was in her Coach, but all her Attendants cast their Eyes on me, and viewed me very attentively.

This was the only Advantage I reaped from an Attempt, of which I had formed great Hopes. My Time I spent, as usual, in eating and drinking, tho always very moderately; in walking up and down my Chamber, and sometimes in reflecting seriously on my Condition. I was, at the same Time, exposed

poſed to freſh Trials, in which I ſtood in Need of all that Moderation which you have been frequently pleaſed to call Stupidity. As the Regiments of *Aſtracan* and *Ingria* were on their March, and only her Majeſty's Body-Guards remained in the City, they were obliged to ſend ſome Peaſants to my Priſon, who were lately ſent for from their Villages, and whoſe ruſtick Deportment was highly diſagreeable to me. My Philoſophy was, on many Occaſions, of little or no Service, and I was obliged ſometimes to come to Blows, to keep them within Bounds. The Soldiers, who were my Guard before, and who were obliged to follow their Regiments, were much more tractable, and civilized; but theſe Peaſants, were all barefaced Raſcals, ripe for any Villany. Hence you may form an Idea of a great Part of the Reſt of the Nation. I have, however, obſerved ſome Diſparity among the People of this vaſt Empire. The Inhabitants of *Muſcow*, and thoſe who live within fifty Leagues of that City, are the moſt unſociable of Human Kind, and hardly deſerve the Name of Men. As I removed from that Part of the Country, I found by Degrees the People leſs Ruſtick, more Humane, and conſequently more fit to be ranked among Men, than the Inhabitants of *Muſcow*, and the adjacent Places. The leaſt barbarous of the *Ruſſians* are thoſe who live in the moſt remote Foreſts, and are, in their Actions, guided by the mere Inſtinct of Nature.

Beſides the Inconveniencies I laboured under on Account of my new Guard, I was, at the ſame Time, deprived of the kind Viſits of Mr. *De L'Iſle*'s Servant, who was taken with a fit of Sickneſs, which confined him at home. This Accident hindered me a long Time, from hearing any other News, but what my Guard and my Stewards were pleaſed to impart to me. Nothing afforded me greater Comfort, in ſo doleful a Situation, than the Liberty I had

had of looking out at my Window, where I could view the fineſt Part of the City. On one Side of my Priſon, I had the Proſpect of a large Garden and Palace, which formerly belonged to the unfortunate Prince *Menzikoff*, and which, at preſent, ſerves as an Academy for the Cadets. I had every Day the Pleaſure of ſeeing thoſe young Perſons perform their Exerciſes; but have been ſince informed, that the State entirely neglects to give them an Education becoming them; and hence the Advantage, expected from that Eſtabliſhment, is fruſtrated. The *Muſcovites* are groſly miſtaken, when they imagine, that the only Qualification requiſite to make a good Soldier, and a Great Captain, is the Art of performing the Exerciſes, and knowing all the Motions of military Diſcipline. All thoſe, who are arrived to any Perfection in the military Art, have had Recourſe to other Sources, and learned Rudiments, very different from thoſe taught in *Muſcovy*. The Prime Miniſters have never ſufficiently weighed one Point, which is, that they have always been too haſty, and endeavoured to run before they could creep, in all their new Eſtabliſhments, and hence it is, that they have frequently neglected the moſt eſſential Matters. Inſtead of founding an Academy of Sciences, and educating a Body of Cadets, they ought to have eſtabliſhed Colleges and Schools, there to have taught the grand Principles of Religion and Morality. There they ſhould have begun the Reform they propoſed; and, indeed, if due Care is not taken in the Education of Youth, how can the Nation poſſibly be extricated from that Barbarity, in which it has been, for ſo many Ages, involved? But I ſhall wave theſe Reflections, which are a little too ſerious, and perhaps not very pertinent.

Such were the Objects, that preſented themſelves to my View in one of the Chambers of my Priſon, I come now to the other, from which I deſcried the Admi-

Admiralty, and another very large Edifice, intended for Her Imperial Majeſty's Palace, not finiſhed, but carrying on with great Aſſiduity. I received the more Pleaſure from the Proſpect of theſe Buildings, as I daily ſaw Crowds of People there, and continual Changes in the Decorations. Though ſo many different Objects diverted me for a Time, yet I could not but make ſerious Reflections on the Cauſes of what I every Day beheld, and was moſt ſtruck with. I was in the utmoſt Conſternation at ſeeing the Admiralty, when I begun to conſider, how a Nation, like the *Ruſſian*, could equip and maintain ſo numerous a Fleet. A ſingle Man, ſaid I, to my ſelf, may perform Wonders, when his Genius is ſuch, as to qualify him for every undertaking, and he enjoys, at the ſame Time, a ſovereign Authority. Such was *Peter* the Great, who, notwithſtanding the inſuperable Difficulties, which he could not but foreſee, and actually met with, was never diſcouraged, but continued to purſue his Aim, even to the laſt Moment of his Life. His Succeſſors have endeavoured to Walk in his Steps, but with little Succeſs. The Averſion, all *Muſcovites* in general bear to the Sea, has always been, and ever will be, one of the greateſt Obſtacles to the Accompliſhment of ſo great a Work. Thoſe among them, who have Employments in the Navy, lament their Fate, and look upon themſelves as miſerable Slaves, condemned to the Gallies. I leave you to judge, whether the maritime Forces of this State can poſſibly ſubſiſt long? I may perhaps be miſtaken, but I am perſuaded their Navy will fall away to nothing. It was, ſome Time ſince, on a Footing very different from what it is now. All thoſe fine Edifices, which by that *Czar*'s Order, were built at *Cronſtadt*, have, by an unpardonable Neglect, already been ſuffered to dilapidate, and this I my ſelf have, with ſome Indignation, been an

Eye-

Eye-Witneſs of. You will, moreover, upon an Examination of the Plan, that great Prince formed for the Building of *Peterſburg*, find only Part of it duly executed. He propoſed, in order to accuſtom his Subjects to Water, to open a large Number of Canals through the City, and this very thing has, in ſeveral Places, been neglected. That glorious Emperor would, during his Life, never permit any Bridge to be laid a-croſs the River, or his Subjects to make uſe of Oars in paſſing over. By this, they were laid under a Neceſſity of learning how to manage a Sail, if they wanted to go from one Part of the City to the other. Theſe Regulations are now entirely aboliſhed. The Admiralty I have not ſeen, but if I may give Credit to the Perſons employed there, every Thing is in a terrible Diſorder. A Report is however current in the Publick News, that they levied ſeveral thouſand Seamen for this Campaign. The *Baltick* is not very large, and we ſhall conſequently ſoon know, how they are to be employed. I ſhall, therefore, give Credit to all that is ſaid about them, till we are better informed.

As for another Fleet, which is ſaid to be intended for the *Caſpian* Sea, I much doubt of the Truth of that Report, ſince there is not yet a ſingle Veſſel on that Sea. I know, that this Project was formed by *Peter* I. and have my ſelf ſeen five or ſix Ships at *Caſan*, of a particular Structure, deſigned for thoſe Seas, but they are left on the Stocks, and there probably they will ſtill remain. Beſides, the Seamen which were to be employed on that Occaſion, were recalled to *Peterſburg*, towards the Concluſion of 1733, and ſet out on their Journey at the ſame Time I did. Be therefore aſſured, Sir, that if there are, at preſent, any Veſſels on the *Caſpian* Sea, they are at beſt, only ſome large Barks, built after the Manner of the Country, and made uſe of for the Traffick of private Perſons. To this I may add, that

thoſe Barks are ſo far from being fit to keep the Sea, that I have ſtrong Reaſons to doubt, whether any one of them ever ſailed to *Aſtracan*. Their Structure is very uncommon, and I believe it will be ſomewhat new to you, if I tell you, that the Carriages in thoſe Parts have two Poles, and the Barks two Helms. But this does not facilitate their Motion, which I my ſelf have but too much experienced.

This may give you an Idea of the Fleet on the *Caſpian* Sea. A flouriſhing Commerce might, I grant, be eſtabliſhed there: But, to bring about an Enterprize like that, the *Muſcovites* muſt be leſs ſtupid, and the Miniſtry of that great Monarchy made up of abler Perſons. But nothing ſeems more ſurprizing, than that, as they are themſelves incapable of carrying on ſuch a Commerce, they will not permit Foreigners to do it. The *Engliſh* and *Dutch*, it is well known, have made ſeveral Attempts to eſtabliſh a Trade in this Country, but, notwithſtanding the conſiderable Advantages the *Muſcovites* might have gained thereby, thoſe Endeavours have all been fruitleſs. Be not, therefore, deluded, the *Muſcovites* have no ſuch Fleet in *Aſia*, the Rumour is groundleſs, and only publiſhed with a View of impoſing upon the World. But if they actually had ſuch a Fleet, I know not the leaſt Benefit they could receive from it. It cannot be ſaid to be intended for Commerce, ſince their Trade conſiſts only in Salt Fiſh, which is vended at *Aſtracan*. Nor have we more Reaſon to believe, that they propoſe to make Uſe of it, in defending, in Caſe of Neceſſity, the Conqueſts they have made in *Perſia*, as they can neither land on the Coaſts of the Province of *Kilan*, nor on a great Part of thoſe of *Schirvan*. The Water is too ſhallow on the former, and the Ground of the latter is by no Means fit for any Ship to Anchor in. It would be more

adviſable for the *Muſcovites* to keep a good Army on Foot, in thoſe Parts, than to have a Fleet there; for, unleſs they reſtore that Country voluntarily, it is to be preſumed, that the former Poſſeſſors will not fail to ſurprize them, and force them to return what they have made themſelves Maſters of, contrary to the Laws of Nations.

I had almoſt forgot to tell you, that there is, on the *Caſpian* Sea, a Kind of ſmall Fleet mann'd by the Subjects of the *Muſcovite* Empire, I mean thoſe bold and reſolute Pirates, the *Coſacks* of *Jaick*, who, during the Summer Seaſon, cruize, with a large Number of Barks, on the Eaſtern Coaſts of that Sea. They pillage and ranſack whatever they meet with; and as the Spoils theſe People make are their only Support, they know neither Friend nor Ally, where their Intereſt is concerned; nay, it frequently happens, that they have no Regard for the *Muſcovites*, who fall into their Hands. Perhaps it is to theſe Barks the *Muſcovites* have given the Appellation of a Fleet, and in that Caſe I cannot but agree with them, that they have one: I ſhould only deſire them to explain their Meaning more clearly, when they publiſh News of that Kind, and not endeavour to impoſe on the Publick.

I did not intend, Sir, to detain you with ſo long Digreſſions, and ſhould be at a Loſs to account for my being thus tedious. Are not all theſe beautiful Objects, which my Chamber-Windows preſent to my View, the Occaſion of it? But the Enquiry is hardly worth the Labour, and beſides,

Jam feſſa labat mihi pondere cervix.

LETTER IX.

SIR,

I Should be glad to know, what you think of my long Silence. You have undoubtedly ſuppoſed me once more loſt, or at leaſt, that I have met with ſome freſh Adventure. But be not uneaſy, Sir, neither of theſe is the Caſe. You need only recollect the deplorable State I have been reduc'd to, and then you'll not find it difficult to gueſs at the Cauſe. Whoever, like me, has had the Misfortune to ſwallow a large Doſe of Poiſon, cannot expect but to lead afterwards a lingring Life. I ſtill continue weak, and am hardly able to apply my ſelf to any Thing. I was ſome Days ago ſeiz'd with ſo great a Heavineſs, that I thought I had loſt the Uſe of all my Limbs. My Mind ſeemed on that Occaſion to receive Impreſſions from my Body, and appeared as it were annihilated. I cannot, I aſſure you, conceive the Cauſe of theſe Symptoms, and very much doubt, whether the moſt able Phyſicians can account for them. But moſt certain it is, that they muſt have been produced by ſome ſubtle Poiſon, known only to the *Muſcovites*. But why do I tire you with this ſhocking Subject. Let us mention it no more. For I ought perhaps to think my ſelf happy in feeling the Effects of it.

In my laſt, I informed you, how I diverted my ſelf in my Priſon. I ſpent my Time there, as I

told you before, ſometimes in making ſerious Reflections on the State of my Affairs, and ſometimes in conſidering on Means, whereby to deliver my ſelf from my Captivity. I was at a Loſs what Courſe to take, and knew not what to rely on, when I received Orders to prepare to appear before the Senate. This agreeable News I received on the 18th of *June*. Be pleaſed, Sir, to take Notice of this Epoch, which, as I believe I have obſerved before, is very remarkable. Having been conducted to the Senate-Chamber, I there ſaw an Aſſembly of ſeven or eight Lords, all ſitting round a Table, and ſeeming to expect me with ſome Impatience. I was ſo far from being intimidated at the Sight of theſe Gentlemen, that it encouraged me to approach them without being dejected, or expreſſing the leaſt Submiſſion. They gave me a very cold Reception, in a Manner ſeemingly perplexed. They hardly dared to lift up their Eyes. After a Moment's Silence, one of them, who had formerly been condemn'd to the Scaffold, to leave his Head in the Hands of the Executioner, was the firſt, who ſpoke, and accoſting me, told me in *Italian*, that, as they were informed, that I demanded a Hearing, they had ſent for me, to know what I had to alledge in my own Behalf. I anſwered, that as I ſaw no End of my Impriſonment, nor could conceive the Motives of ſo tedious and inſupportable a Captivity, I had reſolved, three Months before, to preſent a Petition, whereby I deſired to be heard what I had to ſay in my Juſtification. That I now re-iterated the ſame Demand, and that the Juſtice of my Cauſe, and the Equity of the Aſſembly, removed all Doubts of not obtaining an immediate and entire Satisfaction. But replied he, what is your Deſign, what is it you intend to write? Nothing, anſwered I, but what is neceſſary to juſtify my Proceedings and Conduct.

Conduct. Could you not, ſaid he, do this by Word of Mouth, and what induces you to deſire, to do it in Writing? I told him, I was at that Inſtant ready to vindicate my ſelf, if they thought fit: But that I believed, I could repreſent Things to them in a clearer Light, in Writing, and that they might then make their Report of it to the *Czarina*, from whom I had Reaſon to expect immediate Redreſs. This they were obliged to put to the Vote, and to conſult among themſelves, what would be moſt proper in this Caſe. After having made me wait a long Time, they told me at laſt, I ſhould have Neceſſaries for Writing, and that, the next Morning, they would receive my Plea. I returned them Thanks, and promiſed to begin it immediately, and be ready for the appointed Hour. Being aſked by one of thoſe Gentlemen, whether I underſtood no other Language but the *Italian*, I anſwered that I was likewiſe verſed in the *French*; whereupon he deſired, I would likewiſe draw up a Copy of my Repreſentation in that Tongue.

No ſooner was I returned to my Priſon, than I was ſupplied with all Things requiſite for writting, and inſtantly begun to draw up my two Copies. As I had not much Time to ſpare for the Completion of this Work, I was obliged to be expeditious, and the Length, together with the Stile of it, may give you Room to judge how great a Hurry I was in. No one appeared the next Morning to fetch my Paper, nor was it ſent for, till the Day following. Such are the Proceedings of the *Muſcovites*, they act in every Thing with an unheard of Slowneſs, and I thought my ſelf well off, to find, that it was not poſtponed for ſeveral Weeks.

I beg leave here to tranſcribe this Writing entire, and to ſend it you very near the ſame, as it was

preſented to the Senate, though you have, in my preceding Letters, already ſeen a Part of what was contained therein. I ſhall be glad in the Sequel to know your Opinion of it, and whether the Reaſons I there alledge were not ſufficient for my Juſtification.

Fata volentem ducunt, nolentem trahunt;
Sed quo fata trahunt virtus ſecura ſequetur.

" I ſet out from *France*, about the Beginning " of the Year 1733, *ſic jubente fata*. All *Europe* " was then in a profound Peace. The principal " Motive of my Departure from that Country " was, to avoid a Marriage, which I ſhould have " been inevitably obliged to. I travelled through " *Germany*, without being provided with any Paſs, " or being ever aſked for one in any Place what- " ſoever. Being arrived at *Dantzick*, I was forced " to make ſome Stay there, till I could meet with " the Convenience of a Ship, to carry me to *Pe-* " *terſburg*, whither I intended to go. I lodged " at the Houſe of an *Italian*, named *Brunati*, who " then lived at *Dantzick*, and continued there dur- " ing my Stay in that City. As I propoſed to " be there *incognito*: I pretended to be an *Italian* " Merchant, and went by the Name of *Roccaforte*. " When I was juſt going to leave that Place, I was " told, that I muſt provide my ſelf with a Paſs, " and that it was abſolutely neceſſary, as I de- " ſigned for *Ruſſia*. I applied hereupon to the " Magiſtracy of *Dantzick*, and to the Perſon who " is entruſted with the Direction of the Affairs of " *Ruſſia* in that City.

" Thus provided with two Paſſes, I departed " from *Dantzick*, and arrived at *Peterſburg* about " the Middle of *June*. My Landlord recommend- " ed me, by Letter, to the Acquaintance of Mr.

Mariotii,

" *Mariotti.* To this Gentleman I freely opened
" my Mind, and acquainted him with my Reſolu-
" tion of entring into military Service. I told him,
" that I was not a Merchant, but a Soldier, and a
" Perſon of Diſtinction. As I was determined not
" to diſcover my real Name, I took Care to paſs
" by no other, but that of *Roccaforte.* Mr. *Ma-*
" *riotti* apprized me of the great Difficulties I ſhould
" meet with in the Execution of my Deſign, but
" when I told him, that Mr. *Avolio* had offered me
" his Service, he promiſed to ſend for him to his
" Houſe, and to treat with him on that Head. We
" met all three at the appointed Hour, and thoſe
" Gentlemen being both of the ſame Opinion, I
" was obliged to think of ſome other Expedient.

" I was ſoon fixed in my Choice, and determi-
" ned to go in Queſt of Employment into *Perſia.* I
" had been informed, that the Prince of *Heſſe-Hom-*
" *burg*, commanded there, and, as I was not ig-
" norant of his many excellent Qualities, I had
" Room to think, that he would grant me his Pro-
" tection. This Reſolution was confirmed by a
" ſingular Adventure, which at the ſame Time
" cauſed me to haſten my Departure. As her Ma-
" jeſty was one Day returning from a Review,
" which had been taken on the Meadow, on the
" ſide of her Summer-Palace, I was walking along
" the little Canal, which ſeparates the Meadow
" from the Garden, and there I ſat down, with a
" Book in my Hand, at the Root of a Tree. Whilſt
" my Mind was wholly intent on what I read, Her
" Majeſty, accompanied by only three or four
" Perſons, came into a Walk of the Garden, di-
" rectly opoſite to the Place where I ſat, without
" my perceiving her. One of that Princeſs's Reti-
" nue came at the ſame Time to the Banks of the
" Canal, and made Signs to me to riſe, telling me,
" that Her Majeſty was there. I immediately

" obeyed, and after having made a very low Bow,
" I retired ſome Steps backwards, with a Deſign
" to depart. The ſame Perſon, who had ſpoken
" to me, returned, in the very Inſtant, and aſked
" me, by her Majeſty's Command, whether I was
" an *Italian?* I anſwered, *Son Italiano* (I am an
" *Italian*) and inſtantly retired. I was greatly a-
" mazed, not being able to comprehend, how the
" *Czarina* could take me for an *Italian*. Had not
" the Canal hindered me from approaching that
" Princeſs, I ſhould perhaps have taken Advan-
" tage of ſo lucky an Incident, and have thrown
" my ſelf at her Feet, to beg ſome Employment
" of her, ſince I was in ſo great an Uncertainty of
" obtaining any elſewhere.

" I went, after this Adventure, to Mr. *Mariotti*,
" and begged of him to procure me an Opportuni-
" ty of departing ſpeedily, I ſold, in the mean
" Time, Part of my Equipage, to have where-
" withal to bear my Charges. As I had Occaſion
" for a freſh Paſs, I went my ſelf to the College of
" Commerce, to aſk for one, which they granted
" me by the ſame Name of *Roccaforte*. Whilſt I
" was employed in making Proviſions for my
" Journey, I was informed, that ſome Profeſſors
" of the Academy were preparing for an immediate
" Journey to *Caſan*, from whence they were to go to
" *Kamtſchatki*. This Opportunity was too favou-
" rable to be neglected; I therefore made Enquiry
" directly, to whom I muſt apply my ſelf, to be
" admitted into their Company. I was recom-
" mended to Mr. *De l' Iſle*, whom I thereupon
" viſited. This learned Profeſſor gave me a very
" kind Reception. He told me, he was not to go
" the Journey himſelf, but that his Brother was.
" Having applied to him, he approved of my
" Reſolution, and promiſed me all the Service in
" his Power. The two other Profeſſors received

me

" me with equal Civility. Having got every thing
" ready for my Journey, Mr. *De la Croyere* ſent me
" a Meſſage, to come to his Houſe, with all my
" Baggage, in Order to depart the next Day. Our
" Journey was, nevertheleſs, delay'd, and Mr. *De*
" *l' Iſle* and his Wife took me, in the mean Time,
" in the moſt obliging Manner imaginable, into
" their Houſe. I diſcovered to Mr. *De l' Iſle*,
" in the Converſation I had with him, my earneſt
" Deſire of undertaking the Journey to *Kamts-*
" *chatki*, but being informed, that I muſt apply to
" the Senate for that Purpoſe, I thought no more
" of it. It would have been impoſſible to remain
" unknown, as I deſired to be, if I had applied to
" the Senate. Some other Difficulties occurring,
" with Regard to my Journey with the Profeſſors,
" I reſolved to ſet out before them, with only one
" Servant, whom *Monſ. de la Croyere* had been ſo
" kind as to give me.

" I met theſe Gentlemen at *Bronnits*, from whence
" I continued my Journey with them to *Caſan*. At
" my Arrival, I immediately made Enquiry whe-
" ther any Ship was ready to ſail for *Aſtracan*. The
" Seaſon being too far already advanced, my En-
" quiries were in vain. In this Juncture, I thought
" of another Expedient, and having met with a
" ſmall Veſſel, which ſeemed to be convenient, I
" had reſolved to embark in it. The imminent Dan-
" ger, I was going to expoſe my ſelf to, was ſo
" plainly repreſented to me, by thoſe, to whom I
" communicated my Deſign, that they, at laſt,
" prevailed upon me to alter my Mind. After
" having well weighed the Matter, I thought it
" more convenient to take the Journey by Land,
" and to wait ſome Time longer. As I had heard
" a very good Character of the Governour of *Ca-*
" *ſan*, I thought it my Duty to pay my Reſpects
" to him. When I accoſted him, I gave him my

Paſs,

" Paſs, and, acquainting him with my real Quali-
" ty, I told him, that I was nothing leſs than a
" Merchant, and that I thought it a Matter of lit-
" tle Importance to the Publick to know my real
" Name and Condition, that I was determined to
" repair to *Perſia*, and to offer my ſelf to the
" Prince of *Heſſe Homburg*, to ſerve under him, in
" Her Majeſty's Troops. He bemoaned my Fate,
" and, at the ſame Time, promiſed to procure me
" the firſt Opportunity for my Departure. He
" deſired to know my Name, and took it down in
" Writing. Having aſked his Leave to viſit him
" now and then, he replied, he ſhould look upon
" it as an Honour; and aſſured me I might rely
" on his Protection.

" Having taken this Step, I went to *Monſ. de la*
" *Croyere*, reſolved to acquaint him with what had
" paſſed. But, I was hardly got into his Apart-
" ment, when the Major of the Place came to arreſt
" me, by the Governor's Order, and ſeized my
" Sword. Nothing was found about me, or in my
" Trunk, which could give any Grounds for Suſpi-
" cion. In ſhort, after three Days, I was carried
" to *Muſcow*, and from thence to *Peterſburg*. All
" theſe Circumſtances being well averred, and there
" being none of them which can admit of the
" leaſt Doubt, the next Enquiry is, whether there
" was any Room to ſuppoſe me a Criminal, or
" that I had any other Intention, than that of being
" employed in Her Majeſty's Service. This En-
" quiry may be made in the following Manner,
" which will, at the ſame Time, give ſufficient
" Proofs for my Juſtification.

" I obſerved above, that I quitted *France*, at
" the Beginning of the Year 1733, at a Time,
" when all *Europe* was in Peace. This firſt Re-
" mark is an inconteſtable Proof, that I could not
" be charged with any ſecret Commiſſion from the

Court

" Court of *France*, to the Prejudice of that of *Ruſ-*
" *ſia*. But ſuppoſing even, that I had not left
" *France*, till after the Face of Affairs was changed
" in *Poland*, by the Death of King *Auguſtus*, can
" it be preſumed, that I ſhould be made Choice of,
" at ſo important a Juncture? Ought I, not, on the
" other Hand, to have taken other Meaſures, than
" thoſe, which it is evident I did take, and ſhould
" I not have been more cautious, and reſerved in all
" my Proceedings? My Behaviour was certainly
" not like that of a Perſon, who endeavoured to
" impoſe upon others. How can any one, more-
" over, be ſuppoſed to be an Emiſſary, who is not
" in the leaſt acquainted with the Language of that
" Country, to which he is ſent, and neither provi-
" ded with any Retinue, nor even with an Inter-
" preter? Perſons, entruſted with the Management
" of State-Affairs, are, I believe, ſeldom ſent in-
" to a foreign Country, without being furniſhed
" with Money, or, at leaſt, Credit. But I came
" into *Muſcovy*, without either. This laſt is a moſt
" convincing Proof, and merits ſome Regard. But
" let us go yet farther, and examine all my Steps.

" The ſole Motive of my Departure from *France*,
" was to avoid a Marriage which I muſt otherwiſe
" have engaged in. That I quitted upon no other,
" but ſome ſuch Inducement, is ſufficiently proved
" by the Manner, wherein I retired from all the
" World, from my moſt intimate Friends, and
" from my Domeſticks, abandoning, at the ſame
" Time, all I poſſeſſed. I know not, whether a-
" ny Enquiries have been made after me, but if
" there has, there can have been no other Anſwer,
" but that I diſappeared at the Beginning of 1733,
" and that none had ſince been able to get Infor-
" mation, whither I was retired. It is well known,
" what Reply I made to the Queſtion, which was
" put to me at Her Majeſty's Palace, when I was

ordered

" ordered to name the Perſon, who was the Oc-
" caſion of my Flight. I told the Gentleman,
" who was ſo inquiſitive on that Head, that the
" Sex claimed a particular Reſpect, though it
" often merited not our leaſt Regard. I here beg
" leave to add, that if a Declaration of that kind
" could even procure my Liberty, or ſave my
" Life, I ſhould not conſent to make it; and were
" I to be guilty of ſo baſe an Action, I ſhould
" think my ſelf deſerving of the moſt rigorous
" Treatment from Her Majeſty. But what, af-
" ter all, would a Confeſſion of that Kind avail?
" It would be needleſs for me to name the Perſon
" my ſelf, if the Affair is publickly known, as
" others may be applied to for that Intelligence.
" But if, on the contrary, this Adventure is not
" come to any one's Knowledge, if I am the on-
" ly Perſon acquainted with it, I think my
" ſelf obliged in Honour and Conſcience to keep
" it ſecret. But ſuppoſing, I ſhould name the La-
" dy, would my Confeſſion be credited, or would
" ſhe herſelf be applied to, to relate the Correſ-
" pondence that had been between her and me?
" Should the Boldneſs or Inſolence be carried ſo
" far, I believe the Attempt, would be fruitleſs,
" and turn to the Confuſion of him who ſhould
" make it.

" It ſeems needleſs to make any Mention here
" of my Journey through *Germany*, ſince moſt of
" the States, through which I paſſed, are her Ma-
" jeſty's Allies and Confederates. I ſhall only
" take Notice of my Stay at *Dantzick*, where I was
" known to the Gentleman who there adminiſters
" the Affairs of *Ruſſia*. I led a very retired Life,
" in that City, and converſed, to the beſt of my
" Knowledge, with no other Perſon, there, but
" thoſe of the Houſe, where I lodged. I went
" a few Days after my Arrival, to pay a Viſit to

Her

" Her Majeſty's Reſident in that City, I even had
" frequent Opportunities of ſeeing him, afterwards,
" and from him I received a Paſs at my Depar-
" ture. If all theſe Proceedings be conſidered,
" can it be inferred from hence, that I was, at
" that Time, charged with any ſecret or dange-
" rous Commiſſion?

" Let my Behaviour at *Peterſburg* be next ex-
" amined. I repaired, on my Arrival into that
" Capital, to Mr. *Mariotti*, to deliver a Letter,
" which had been given me, and begged at the
" ſame Time, he would procure me a Lodging
" near his Houſe; I then, according to the Cuſ-
" tom of the Country, carried my Paſs to the Ma-
" giſtracy, before I went to my Lodging; when
" I went from thence to the Cuſtom-Houſe to
" take out my Baggage, I met with *Monſ. Avo-*
" *lio*, who offered me his Service. As that Gen-
" tleman was not acquainted with me, he imme-
" diately enquired, what Profeſſion I was of, and
" whether I was not come to *Peterſburg* with a
" View of following that of a Fencing-Maſter.
" I anſwered, ſmiling, that I knew how to uſe
" my Sword, in my own Defence, but was not a
" Perſon who would inſtruct others in that Art.
" He then, in very obliging Terms, repeated his Of-
" fers of Service, but I told him, that I could
" not accept of them yet, but ſhould, in the Se-
" quel, be glad of the Honour of a longer Con-
" verſation with him. Let any one judge, by theſe
" Circumſtances, whether I endeavoured, at that
" Time, to be concealed, as was, without Grounds,
" intimated in the Examination I paſſed in Her
" Majeſty's Palace. But let us view what fol-
" lowed. I took Mr. *Mariotti* aſide, the next
" Morning, and fully entruſted him with the Si-
" tuation of my Affairs. The only Secret I was
" unwilling to diſcloſe to him, was, my real Name.

" As

" As I was determined to enter into Her Majeſty's " Service, I took his Advice, how to proceed in " that Caſe. When he endeavoured to repreſent " the great Difficulties I ſhould meet with in my " Deſign; I told him, that *Monſ. Avolio* had of- " fered me his Service, and that I doubted not, but " he would act in my Behalf; in ſhort, in the Con- " ference I had with theſe two Gentlemen, they a- " greed in their Opinions, that my Project could " not ſucceed. Hereupon I reſolved to go into " *Perſia*, and deſire no other Favour of them, but " that of recommending me to their Friends. Is " any one of theſe Circumſtances capable of ground- " ing a Suſpicion of my being an Emiſſary?

" During my Stay at *Peterſburg*, I own that I " paſſed by a fictitious Name, but did not, how- " ever, conceal my ſelf from any one, and every " Body there might judge of every Step I took. I " frequented the Houſe of Mr. *Mariotti*, with him " I dieted, and converſed familiarly, with whom- " ſoever I there met with. I never failed being at " the Catholick Church, and viſiting the Fathers " who officiated there, and this I did at Times " when thoſe Places were frequented by a great " Concourſe of People. I diſcourſed indiſcrimi- " nately with every one, owned my ſelf to be an " *Italian*, and my being come from *France* was " concealed from none. I walked through every " Part of the City, was preſent at all Reviews, and " a Spectator of all the Exerciſes performed by the " Troops; I was, in fine, ſo far from endeavour- " ing to remain unknown, that I even expoſed my " ſelf to the Eyes of the *Czarina*. All that can be " inferred from theſe Things, is, that I concealed " my Name, and, as I could not appear in a " Manner ſuitable to my Birth, kept within the " Bounds, to which the Situation of my Affairs had " reduced me.

When

" When I ſought for an Opportunity of depart-
" ing from thence, I was informed that the Profeſ-
" ſors were likewiſe preparing for a Journey; to
" theſe Gentlemen I made preſſing Inſtances, to ad-
" mit me into their Company, which they granted.
" I ſhould, without Doubt, have carefully avoided
" being one of that Party, had I intended to re-
" main unknown. Satisfied with what I thought
" I had obtained, I retired to the Houſe of Mr. *De*
" *l' Iſle*, in Expectation of my Departure; here I
" ſaw every one who came thither, converſed with
" them, and, as our chief Diſcourſe generally con-
" cerned *France*, they might eaſily gueſs, by what
" I ſaid on that Subject my ſelf, that I was tho-
" roughly acquainted with the *French* Court, and
" had ſpent great Part of my Life in that Country.
" My Conſultation with Mr. *De l' Iſle*, about the
" Journey to *Kamtſchatki* was by no Means feigned,
" and I was fully reſolved to undertake it, my only
" Aim, at that Time, being to retire into a Coun-
" try where I might live unknown to every one.
" Would a Perſon charged with any Commiſſion
" have acted a Part like this? I am plainly juſtifi-
" ed by the bare Conſideration of theſe Facts.

" But to this it is objected, that taking Paſſes in
" a fictitious Name manifeſtly proves my Guilt.
" By a Regulation eſtabliſhed throughout the whole
" Kingdom, I could not obtain a freſh Paſs, with-
" out producing, at the ſame Time, that which I
" had brought from *Dantzick*. Since therefore I
" was unwilling to be known by my real Name, I
" was obliged to continue to paſs for a Merchant,
" and to retain the Name of *Rocceforte*. This Ac-
" cuſation is certainly without Foundation, and thus
" I reply to it.

" I could not, in the Situation I was in, and being
" ſo deſirous of executing the Reſolution I had ta-
" ken of entring into the Service, avoid a Diſcove-

ry

" ry of my real Quality, and was obliged to
" profeſs my ſelf a Soldier, and to quit my Cha-
" racter of a Merchant. Privileges of this Kind
" have been always allowed to Travellers, the
" Law of Nations no ways oppoſe it, there is
" no Law that forbids it, it is authorized by the
" Cuſtom of all *Europe*, and in ſhort Princes ſome-
" times afford us Precedents of what I have done.
" Unleſs a Traveller applies his Paſs to a bad
" Purpoſe, he has never been thought criminal for
" making uſe of a fictitious Name. Can it be
" proved, that I have made any Attempt to pre-
" judice the State? The publick Affairs are no
" ways concerned in the Change of my Name;
" that is my Affair only.

" But it may be again objected, what Occaſion
" had I to take a Paſs for *Muſcow*, when I de-
" ſigned to go elſe where? This Accuſation is no
" better grounded, than the others; for, in the
" firſt Place, when I required a Paſs for *Muſcow*,
" I intended to take that Route, and ſhould actu-
" ally have done it, had not ſome new Difficul-
" ties, which I could not foreſee, induced me to
" change my Reſolution. In the ſecond Place,
" when I produced my Paſs, I was told, that it
" would be needleſs to take any other, and that
" with this I ſhould find an uninterrupted Paſſage
" throughout *Ruſſia*; and laſtly, as my firſt Paſs
" had coſt me five or ſix Rubles, and I was not
" very fluſh of Money, I thought I might diſ-
" penſe with purchaſing, at ſo dear a Rate, what
" I had no Occaſion for.

" I ſhall not enter into a Diſcuſſion of what
" paſs'd on my Journey from *Peterſburg* to *Ca-*
" *ſan*. Whoever deſires to know that, need on-
" ly peruſe my Journal on that Head, which
" may be found amongſt my Papers. There may
" be ſeen an Account of the moſt remarkable Ad-

" ventures

" ventures I met with on that Journey, none of " which can give any one Room to think me a " ſuſpected Perſon.

" Before I conclude this State of my Caſe, it " will be proper to make ſome Enquiry into my " Conduct at *Caſan*, and this Article likewiſe " merits ſome Conſideration. No ſooner was I ar- " rived in this City, than my Friends repreſented " to me a thouſand Difficulties, which attended the " Voyage I was going to undertake; they re- " monſtrated the bad Seaſon of the Year, the Dan- " gers I was going to expoſe my ſelf to, the Want " of convenient Boats, and at laſt prevailed upon " me to make a much longer Stay in that City, " than I had propoſed. Not thinking it, in the " mean Time, proper to paſs for an unknown " Perſon, I went to viſit the Governor, and opened " my Mind to him. I frankly told him who I " was, repreſented to him the Situation of my Af- " fairs, acquainted him with my Deſigns, begged " he would grant me ſome Perſons to ſerve for " Guides, and, that he might have no Room to " doubt of my Sincerity, offered him my Sword, " and told him, that I was ready to be his Priſoner, " till he could be better informed of my Quality.

" This would certainly have been the moſt im- " prudent Step I ever made, had I intended to " engage in any Undertaking contrary to the In- " tereſts of *Ruſſia*. I was beſides under no Obli- " gation of going to pay my Reſpects to the Go- " vernor. I might even have been at *Aſtracan* " before that Time, by only hiring a ſmall Veſ- " ſel in any of the Cities I paſſed through, which " would have carried me thither much ſooner, " than by the Way of *Caſan*; where I was oblig'd " to make a long Stay. Nothing hinder'd me, " moreover, from ſetting Sail immediately after " my Arrival at *Caſan*, ſince I met with a

" ſmall Veſſel, and many People offered me their
" Service to conduct me either by Land or Wa-
" ter. But inſtead of laying hold of theſe Con-
" veniènces, I unfortunately went to viſit the Go-
" vernor, who inſtantly cauſed me to be Arreſted,
" and afterwards to be caſt into Priſon. Such was
" my Adventure at *Caſan*, and it was that occa-
" ſioned my Detention.

" The laſt Thing I have to ſay in Vindication
" of my ſelf is, that had I known my ſelf guilty
" of any Crime, I could many ways have avoided
" being carried from *Caſan* to *Peterſburg*; no-
" thing could have been more eaſy. For I may
" venture to ſay, without injuring my Guard, that
" they were willing to allow me a reaſonable Li-
" berty, and placed an entire Confidence in the
" Promiſe I had given them, not to endeavour
" making my Eſcape. I regarded them rather
" as my Servants, than as my Guard. Their Arms
" and my Sword were always in my Sled, and in
" Caſe of Neceſſity, I could have made Uſe of
" them. I was entirely at Liberty in the Night-
" time, which my Attendants always ſpent in a
" profound Sleep. I might eaſily have taken
" my Flight, whilſt I was among the *Scheremiſs-*
" *Tartars*, and have retired to a Place of Safety.
" Beſides, had I been willing to offer Violence,
" Courage would not have been wanting, I might
" have eaſily routed my three Soldiers. As for
" thoſe, who conducted me from *Muſcow* to *Pe-*
" *terſburg*, they hardly deſerve to be mentioned.
" Let it ſuffice for their Character, that they were
" Drunkards, and notorious Thieves, who robbed
" me of whatever they could. As they were nei-
" ther cloathed nor armed, nor behaved, in any
" other Reſpect, like Soldiers, I know not whe-
" ther I may properly regard them as ſuch. If
" I was guarded by theſe Scoundrels on my Jour-

" ney

" ney to *Peterſburg*, it muſt be imputed to my
" own Willingneſs, as they were undoubtedly in-
" capable of keeping me Priſoner.

" The Juſtice of my Cauſe is ſo plainly de-
" monſtrated by theſe ſeveral Facts, that I doubt
" not of obtaining my Liberty ſo ſoon as they
" are ſubmitted to Her Majeſty's Judgment. The
" Piety, Juſtice and Clemency of that Princeſs is
" ſo well known to me, though a Stranger, that
" I am aſſured, ſhe will never ſuffer a rigorous
" Impriſonment to be inflicted on a Perſon, who
" came into her Dominions with no other Deſign,
" than that of devoting the remaining Part of his
" Life to her Service. Moſt certain it is, that
" ſince the firſt Minute of my Captivity, I have
" been treated with as much Severity as if I had
" acted openly to the Prejudice of the State.

This, Sir, is the Hiſtory of my Captivity; I leave you to judge, upon this Account, of the Juſtice of my Cauſe. Declare your Opinion ſincerely, and tell me without Ceremony, whether you think me guilty? Ought I, do you think, to be detained in Priſon, to be ſent into *Siberia*, or to be reſtor'd to my Liberty. I am ſo well aſſured of your Judgment and Equity, and of the Evidence of the Reaſons I here alledge, that I doubt not of your deciding the Matter inſtantly in my Behalf. I ſhall tell you in the Sequel the Event of this Memorial.

As I expected ſoon to know my Fate, after I had delivered this Writing, my Thoughts, in my Priſon, were wholly employed upon procuring ſome ſafe Retreat, where I might paſs my Time agreeably. Retirement and Eaſe were now the only Objects of my Wiſhes. I was in the mean Time greatly perplexed in making Choice of a Place for my future Abode. *France*, the fineſt Country in the Univerſe, repreſented itſelf to me with moſt attracting Charms, but the Adventure, which

cauſed my Departure from that pleaſant Abode, ſuffered me not to ſatisfy my Inclination. All, I could hope for, was, to live there unknown in ſome retired Place, till ſome fortunate Event could give another Turn to the State of my Affairs. I ſhould have formed a Project very different, had I been in a better State of Health. As I was not far diſtant from *Poland*, I ſhould have taken the Reſolution to go thither in Queſt of Employment. O! with what Pleaſure ſhould I then have embraced an Opportunity of bearing Arms againſt the *Muſcovites*, my greateſt Enemies! They have given me Provocations more than ſufficient to prompt me to a Revenge of all the bad Uſage I have received from their Hands. But unhappily for me, by reducing me to a Condition, which leaves me no Room to hope ever being able to bear the Fatigues of War, they have deprived me of that Satisfaction. My Strength could not but be enervated, and my Health entirely deſtroyed, by the Uneaſineſs of Mind, which they continually gave me, by the Hunger, which they obliged me to labour ſo long a Time under, and by the Poiſon they gave me.

I diverted my ſelf with all theſe pleaſing Hopes, though I was not yet aſſured of obtaining my Liberty. And I had really Reaſon to fear, that they would propoſe to me to remain in *Muſcovy*, and to ſerve in the Army. A Propoſal of this Kind would, I confeſs, have involved me in a freſh Perplexity. I ſhould, on the one Hand, have never prevailed upon my ſelf to paſs my Time in *Muſcovy*, and a Refuſal of their Offer, might, on the other, have been very dangerous. But leſt I ſhould be put to a Non-plus, in Caſe they ſhould make that Propoſal, I reſolved to excuſe my ſelf on Account of the infirm State of my Health, which diſabled me from bearing Arms.

This

This Reſolution being taken, I had nothing to do but to be eaſy, and wait with Patience for whatever might befal me. I ſhall ſend you many more Particulars, by the firſt Courier, but you muſt not yet expect to hear an End of my Misfortunes.

Multa diuque tuli, ſed plura ſuperſunt.

LETTER X.

SIR,

MY laſt, without Doubt, removed all your Uneaſineſs on my Account, and gave you ſome Hopes of ſeeing me again very ſoon. I told you, at the ſame Time, that nothing new had befallen me. The Impatience and Concern you expreſs, for which I cannot but reprove you, only augment my Diſtreſs, and aggravate my Grief. You remind me of all my former and preſent Sufferings in Terms ſo pathetick, and ſo moving, that I cannot but be greatly affected therewith. All you ſay of the Pleaſures we have formerly enjoyed together, does not alleviate my preſent Miſery. Forbear, I beſeech you, Sir, to recall paſt Joys to my Mind, and ceaſe to expatiate on my Misfortunes, and the doleful Circumſtances of my Adventures.

Cur me querelis exanimas tuis?

Which of us two is the moſt to be pitied? Which has moſt Cauſe to wiſh my Liberty? The Abſence of a Friend, who always had, and ſtill retains a moſt tender regard for you, is, I muſt own, afflicting. But, however doleful your Condition may

be, mine is much more ſo. You have, at leaſt, the Comfort of being able to eaſe your Mind a thouſand Ways; but my Fate is very different from yours. Confined in a narrow Priſon, I ſee no one, to alleviate my Grief, and am, at this very Time, uncertain whether I have more Grounds for Hope or Fear. You deſire to know the final Term of my Miſeries, as if it were in my Power to fix it. I pleaſed my ſelf indeed with the Hopes of ſeeing them ſpeedily ended, but an Accident, which has juſt happened, has in a Meaſure fruſtrated all my Deſigns. Give me Leave to relate this Cataſtrophe, and the Manner how it came to my Knowledge.

The Deſire I had of being thoroughly acquainted with the Publick Affairs was one Day revived, when early in the Morning I ſeveral Times heard the Noiſe of Cannon. I would not however have you think it uncommon to be entertained in this Country with that Kind of Harmony. We are every Week diverted with ſeveral Diſcharges of the Artillery. The Revielle and Tap-tow are always expreſſed by firing Cannon, and the Time of repairing to Court is made known in the ſame Manner. A ſurprizing Quantity of Powder is conſumed in this City. It is made uſe of on all Days of Rejoycing, which are here very frequent, on all Feſtivals, and on innumerable other Occaſions. It may, perhaps, be intended to ſtifle the terrible Noiſe and Uproar made at thoſe Times by Drunkards. But let us leave this Conjecture, and enquire into the Reaſons of a Diſcharge of the Cannon ſo early. As this was neither the Reveille nor the Tap-tow, nor was it the Time of Reſorting to Court, I immediately concluded, that ſome extraordinary Accident muſt have been the Occaſion of it. The Situation of the Affairs of *Poland*, at that Time, gave me directly ſome Suſpicion, and as I was highly concerned for thoſe Matters, I could not be

at

at Eaſe till I was farther informed. Above all, I feared this Event, be what it would, might prejudice my Affairs, and, at the ſame Time, fruſtrate all my Hopes.

The Sequel but too plainly proves how well my Fears were founded, but I was not apprized of the Matter ſo ſoon as I wiſhed to be. In vain I asked my Guard, and begged they would inform me of what had happened. I found it impoſſible to get any Intelligence. I prevailed upon one of them to go and enquire, what it was; but he ſoon returned as wiſe as he went. I was very uneaſy all that Day, and ſpent it with an Impatience I am not accuſtomed to. My Corporal, who was my chief Steward, came the next Day and told me, with a ſmiling Countenance, that the City of *Dantzick* was ſurrendered to the *Muſcovites*. I was thunder-ſtruck at this News, which I could never have expected, it ſurprized me, and gave me very uncommon Emotions. Having, however, recovered my ſelf a little, and taken Time to conſider, I begun to doubt of the Truth of the Fact. I aſked my Corporal, whether King *Staniſlaus* was taken, but of this he pretended to be intirely ignorant. His Anſwer ſerved only to encreaſe my Uneaſineſs. Dubious of the Condition, to which that Prince might be reduced, I begun to bemoan his Fate, I entreated the Corporal to go out immediately, and to procure an exact Account of all the Circumſtances of that great Event, and give me a Relation of what he could learn. In order to encourage him to a faithful Diſcharge of his Commiſſion, I gave him ſome Pieces of Silver, and promiſed him more on his Return. But neither this little Preſent, nor my Promiſes, were prevalent enough to make him more ſpeedy; he did not return till the next Day, when he informed me, that King *Staniſlaus* had been taken out of a Cellar, where he lay concealed. This

ridiculous Circumſtance made me not give Credit to his News. And how could I with any Probability imagine, that King *Staniſlaus* would ſuffer himſelf to be ſeized in that Manner? He added, that ſeveral *French*-Men had been taken Priſoners, and would ſoon be brought to *Peterſburg*.

Several other Circumſtances he related ſeeming as improbable, made me ſuſpend my Judgment upon the reſt. But nothing convinced me more than a ſecond Diſcharge of the Artillery, which I took for a clear Demonſtration. I then no longer doubted of what had been told me. I believed, that King *Staniſlaus* was really fallen into the Hands of the *Muſcovites*, and that the *French* were made Priſoners of War. All this put me into ſo great a Diſorder, that my Guard began to perceive it. You know how zealous I have been, and always ſhall be, for the Intereſt of *France*. I feared, on the other Hand, that this Diſaſter of the *French* would give ſome fatal Turn to my Affairs, and prove an Obſtacle to my wiſhed for Releaſement. I not only found, that the *Swedes* were out of the Queſtion, but likewiſe that the Project which I had before formed, of retiring to the Houſe of ſome Foreign Miniſter, could not be executed without great Danger, and running the Hazard of being impriſoned for the reſt of my Life. I was well enough acquainted with the *Muſcovites* to know, to what Exceſs of Inſolence one fortunate Event could carry them. Whilſt they are in Proſperity, they neither regard the Laws of Nations, nor publick Faith, nor, in ſhort,

Quæcunque Altaria tangunt.

As I had given my Corporal a freſh Commiſſion to enquire after all the publick News, he informed me, that the ſecond Diſcharge of Artillery was, as well

well as the former, on Account of the taking of *Dantzick*, that the *French* Priſoners were arrived at *Cronſtadt*, that the Commander in chief, and a large Number of Officers, were already arrived at *Peterſburg*, and laſtly, that they were that Day to dine at Court. He added, that King *Staniſlaus* was not taken, but, as it was certain, that he was ſtill in *Dantzick*, he would not fail of being made Priſoner, as the *French* were, and that he could never find Means of eſcaping from the narrow Search that was made after him. I had now no longer Room, to doubt of the Truth of the greateſt Part of theſe Circumſtances, tho they all appeared very ſtrange to me. How, ſaid I, within my ſelf, could ſo ſtrong a City as *Dantzick*, a Place ſo well defended, fall into the Hands of the *Ruſſians?* Is it poſſible, that the *French* Troops could ſurrender themſelves Priſoners of War, and that King *Staniſlaus* could neglect repairing to ſome Place of Safety?

The Advice, my Corporal had given me, of the Arrival of the *French* Officers at *Peterſburg*, raiſed in me an exceeding great Deſire of ſeeing them, and, to obtain this Satisfaction, I placed my ſelf conſtantly at my Windows, in Hopes of ſeeing ſome one by Chance paſs by my Priſon. In this I happened to ſucceed, and ſaw the chief of them in Her Majeſty's Coach; I knew them even by their Aſpect, but could not poſſibly diſtinguiſh any one of my Acquaintance. I met ſoon after with an Opportunity of ſatisfying my Curioſity. Mrs. *De l' Iſle*'s Cook being recovered from his Indiſpoſition, paid me a Viſit; I immediately aſked him a Thouſand Queſtions about the preſent State of Affairs, and tho he was not able to ſatisfy me in every Point I enquired after, yet he acquainted me thoroughly with many Things, which I was before ignorant of, and which I had not been able to learn either of my Guard, or their Corporal. He informed me that

King

ridiculous Circumſtance made me not give Credit to his News. And how could I with any Probability imagine, that King *Staniſlaus* would ſuffer himſelf to be ſeized in that Manner? He added, that ſeveral *French*-Men had been taken Priſoners, and would ſoon be brought to *Peterſburg*.

Several other Circumſtances he related ſeeming as improbable, made me ſuſpend my Judgment upon the reſt. But nothing convinced me more than a ſecond Diſcharge of the Artillery, which I took for a clear Demonſtration. I then no longer doubted of what had been told me. I believed, that King *Staniſlaus* was really fallen into the Hands of the *Muſcovites*, and that the *French* were made Priſoners of War. All this put me into ſo great a Diſorder, that my Guard began to perceive it. You know how zealous I have been, and always ſhall be, for the Intereſt of *France*. I feared, on the other Hand, that this Diſaſter of the *French* would give ſome fatal Turn to my Affairs, and prove an Obſtacle to my wiſhed for Releaſement. I not only found, that the *Swedes* were out of the Queſtion, but likewiſe that the Project which I had before formed, of retiring to the Houſe of ſome Foreign Miniſter, could not be executed without great Danger, and running the Hazard of being impriſoned for the reſt of my Life. I was well enough acquainted with the *Muſcovites* to know, to what Exceſs of Inſolence one fortunate Event could carry them. Whilſt they are in Proſperity, they neither regard the Laws of Nations, nor publick Faith, nor, in ſhort,

Quæcunque Altaria tangunt.

As I had given my Corporal a freſh Commiſſion to enquire after all the publick News, he informed me, that the ſecond Diſcharge of Artillery was, as well

well as the former, on Account of the taking of *Dantzick*, that the *French* Priſoners were arrived at *Cronſtadt*, that the Commander in chief, and a large Number of Officers, were already arrived at *Peterſburg*, and laſtly, that they were that Day to dine at Court. He added, that King *Staniſlaus* was not taken, but, as it was certain, that he was ſtill in *Dantzick*, he would not fail of being made Priſoner, as the *French* were, and that he could never find Means of eſcaping from the narrow Search that was made after him. I had now no longer Room, to doubt of the Truth of the greateſt Part of theſe Circumſtances, tho they all appeared very ſtrange to me. How, ſaid I, within my ſelf, could ſo ſtrong a City as *Dantzick*, a Place ſo well defended, fall into the Hands of the *Ruſſians?* Is it poſſible, that the *French* Troops could ſurrender themſelves Priſoners of War, and that King *Staniſlaus* could neglect repairing to ſome Place of Safety?

The Advice, my Corporal had given me, of the Arrival of the *French* Officers at *Peterſburg*, raiſed in me an exceeding great Deſire of ſeeing them, and, to obtain this Satisfaction, I placed my ſelf conſtantly at my Windows, in Hopes of ſeeing ſome one by Chance paſs by my Priſon. In this I happened to ſucceed, and ſaw the chief of them in Her Majeſty's Coach; I knew them even by their Aſpect, but could not poſſibly diſtinguiſh any one of my Acquaintance. I met ſoon after with an Opportunity of ſatisfying my Curioſity. Mrs. *De l' Iſle*'s Cook being recovered from his Indiſpoſition, paid me a Viſit; I immediately aſked him a Thouſand Queſtions about the preſent State of Affairs, and tho he was not able to ſatisfy me in every Point I enquired after, yet he acquainted me thoroughly with many Things, which I was before ignorant of, and which I had not been able to learn either of my Guard, or their Corporal. He informed me that

King

King *Staniſlaus* had fortunately made his Eſcape from *Dantzick*, but that nobody yet knew what was become of him: That the *French* Troops, which were come to the Relief of *Dantzick*, had been repulſed, and obliged, after ſeveral fruitleſs Attempts, to capitulate, they not being numerous enough to render their Enterprize ſucceſsful. I wiſhed earneſtly to know what Steps the *Swedes* had taken, and what paſſed in other Parts of *Poland*, but my Intelligencer could not ſatisfy my Curioſity on either of thoſe Heads.

He confirmed, in a ſecond Viſit, his former Advice, that King *Staniſlaus* was no longer at *Dantzick*, and that he was thought to be in Safety in ſome Part of the King of *Pruſſia*'s Dominions. Tho the Situation of that Prince's Affairs appeared to me very melancholy, I could not but eſteem him happy in having delivered himſelf from ſo imminent a Danger, and eſcaped all the Purſuits of the *Muſcovites*. I could hear nothing of the *Swedes*, but that they continued very peaceable, without determining in Favour of either Party, or that any one could penetrate their real Deſigns. He told me the Names of the *French* Officers, who had been taken Priſoners, and, among others, nam'd *Monſ. de la Motthe*, who was at the Head of them, and is an old Acquaintance of mine. I leave you to jndge, how much I lamented th: Fate of thoſe Gentlemen, who are thus reduced to the Neceſſity of giving up their Swords into the Hands of the *Muſcovites*. Strange Fate! that Soldiers ſo brave, as they, ſhould be obliged to ſubmit to Slaves ſo vile! I cannot here omit the Recital of a Story, which I have heard, and appears to me very ſingular, if we may venture to give Credit thereto. In the firſt Interview the *French* Officers had with the *Muſcovite* Generals, the latter, addreſſing themſelves to *Monſ. de la Motthe*, expreſſed a very great Surprize, that the *French* ſhould attack

their

their Intrenchments without a ſingle Diſcharge of Cannon. To this, *Monſ. de la Motthe* is ſaid to have replied; that was a common Method with the *French*. The *Muſcovite* Generals, if this Story be true, muſt certainly know very little of the preſent Method of making an Attnck; and for their better Inſtruction on that Head, it might not be amiſs to ſend them, into *Poland*, ſome of thoſe *Carabiniers*, who were at the Battle of *Guaſtalla*.

The Cook, from whom I received my Intelligences, informed me, moreover, that the Articles of Capitulation granted to the *French* Troops had been violated, and that the *Marquis de Monti* had, notwithſtanding the ſacred Character, wherewith he was inveſted, been put under Confinement. Had any other Nation, beſides the *Muſcovites*, been accus'd of theſe Proceediugs, I readily confeſs, I ſhould not have ſo eaſily given Credit to the Report of them: But I was thoroughly acquainted with the Conduct and Policy of thoſe Gentlemen, and not ignorant that nothing was to them either venerable or ſacred. Was not, therefore, my Cenſure juſt. When I obſerved before, that the *Muſcovites*, *Quæcunque Altaria tangunt*, whilſt fluſhed with Succeſs. This may be called a glorious Beginning of a War. To break through the principal Articles of a Capitulation, to arreſt an Ambaſſador, and to detain him, ſo long, under a rigorous Impriſonment! Are not theſe Things without a Precedent, in a civilized Nation? Are they ſo very blind, that they cannot perceive the Irregularity of their Conduct? The Time may come when they will perhaps have Reaſon to repent of it. Thoſe, in whoſe Hands the Adminiſtration of Affairs in that Country is, ought, in my Opinion, to proceed with more Circumſpection. If they will have no Regard to the Honour of the Nation, or its Intereſts, they ought at leaſt to have the Glory of their Sovereign at Heart, and not

expoſe

expoſe it in ſo flagrant a Manner. They have prevailed on Her Majeſty, by their evil Counſels, to commit an Act of Injuſtice, not only unparalleled, but wholly inconſiſtent with her natural Candour. And what can be more vile, than to treat a brave Officer, who is only guilty by having ſerved his Maſter with Fidelity, in ſo worthleſs a Manner? Have they any Thing to alledge againſt his Conduct? And with what Views do they thus detain him? If I may give Credit to what I have been told at *Dantzick*, the Impriſonment of that Miniſter crys for Vengeance, and this Action muſt be looked upon as the blackeſt and moſt unjuſt, that can be perpetrated. The Inhabitants of *Dantzick* inform me, that he kept within the Bounds of his Miniſtry, and ought he conſequently not to meet with the Treatment preſcribed, in that Caſe, by the Law of Nations. But let us, for a Moment, ſuppoſe he actually had exceeded the Bounds of his Character, muſt he, for that, be deprived of all Liberty? He would, in any other Country, if he had required it, have been ſet free, on his Parole of Honour. But the *Muſcovites* do not act in this Manner, they obſtinately perſiſt in the Practice of their barbarous Cuſtoms, and little Regard what other Nations would do, in a parallel Caſe. It is accounted a Crime in the Marquis *De Monti*, that he ſhewed ſo great a Zeal for the Service of his Maſter, and was ſo firmly attached to the Prince, to whom he was ſent. I ſhould expatiate too much on this Affair, were I to make all the Reflections it would admit of: I proceed, therefore, to what relates to my ſelf, which I intend for the Subject of this Letter.

After having exhauſted my Intelligencer's whole Fund, I drew from him a Promiſe to viſit me oftner, and give me an exact Account of whatever he could learn. This honeſt Man did really exert himſelf,

on

on this Occaſion, and was of great Service to me, during the whole Time of my Captivity. The Pleaſure I received from hearing the publick News, did not, however, abate the earneſt Deſire I had to recover my Liberty. To my Sorrow I found, that no Anſwer was made to my Repreſentation, tho it had been ſo long preſented. The firſt Mention I heard of it was by my Steward, who told me, a Report was current, that I ſhould ſoon be releaſed. This News I the more readily believed, as I thought, that after I had ſo clearly vindicated my ſelf, they had no farther Reaſon to detain me in Priſon. I was afterwards informed, that my Memorial had been referred to the *Czarina*'s Cabinet Council, and that from thence I was to expect a final Determination. The Members of the Senate, as, I think, I obſerved before, are regarded only as mere Underlings, entirely under the Influence of the Miniſters, who are Foreigners. Theſe latter govern with an abſolute Power, all is under their Management, and their Diſpoſal; and this gave me Room to think, that from them I was to expect my Liberty.

My Affairs were retarded by the *Czarina*'s Departure into the Country, for the Summer-Seaſon. Her Majeſty was accompanied by the whole Court, and the Miniſters of the firſt Rank. At this Time, I was once more obliged to remove to another Priſon. I was carried to the very Place, where the Senate aſſembles. This removal occaſioned me to remark in my Journal, that I had been led *ab Herode ad Pilatum*, I might have added, *a Pilato ad Calvarium*: For, after all the Miſeries I had undergone, I had only this laſt Step to take. The Motive, that induced them to remove me from my former Priſon, very plainly demonſtrates, how little they were concerned for my Life. The Members of the Senate being apprized, that the Houſe, where they met, was in a ruinous State, thought proper to quit it, and

to

to aſſemble in that, wherein I was confined. What think you, Sir, of this Expedient, to rid themſelves of a Man, whom they had already obliged to paſs *per ignem & aquam*, but both without Succeſs. They probably thought, that after I had withſtood Poiſon, endured the Fatigue of a long and toilſome Journey, laboured under Famine, and all the Miſeries, I had been expoſed to, they had no other Means left of haſtning my Death, than by burying me alive under the Ruins of an old decayed Building. Their black Deſign, happily for me, proved abortive; for Providence, which had hitherto, almoſt miraculouſly, preſerved my Life, continued ſtill favourable to me, and ſo diſpoſed Matters, that what was intended to be the Cauſe of my Perdition, turned to my Advantage, and ſerved only to render my Confinement more agreeable.

I ſoon found my ſelf beſet, in my new Apartment, by all kinds of Artificers, Architects, Joyners, Carpenters, Maſons, and other ſorts of People, who were continually going in and out of my Chamber. With Pleaſure I ſaw ſo great a Concourſe of People, which, at any other Time, would have been troubleſome to me. I made frequent Enquiries, what Condition the Building was in, and whether I was not in Danger of being cruſhed under the Ruins of it: Thus I continued in conſtant Fear, though I was told I might depend on my Safety. I entertained no great Opinion of the *Muſcovite* Architects, and the Perſon, to whoſe Direction this Work was entruſted, appeared to me not the beſt qualified, to judge of the Danger, I was expoſed to. As he ſpoke *Italian*, I was curious to know by what Means he learnt that Language. He told me, he had travelled into *Italy*, and, on his Return, entered into the Service of an *Italian* Architect, who had inſtructed him both in his Language and Art. His Skill in the latter was not ſo great, that I could depend

pend on his Word; I therefore examined every Part of the Building my ſelf, and, with a Plummet in Hand, ſhewed my unexperienced Engineer thoſe Places which were in the moſt ruinous Condition. He complyed pretty readily with my Directions, and it happened fortunately for me, that he followed them, in Regard to the Arched Roof of a large Hall, which ſtood in Need of Shoring: For had he executed his firſt Plan, and neglected the Meaſures I pointed out to him, that Roof would certainly have fallen, and drawn after it the other Parts of the Building, which were all in a tottering Condition.

Employments of this kind, on which I ſpent the beſt Part of my Time, afforded me a very great Pleaſure. I may truly ſay, that the *Muſcovites* are very ignorant of any Thing relating to Edifices of Stone, but muſt do them the Juſtice, to acknowledge, that they are very expert in whatever relates to Carpentry. They know the Uſe of no other Inſtrument, but the Axe, and this they handle with ſo much Dexterity, that not a ſingle Nail is made uſe of in the Structure of their largeſt Houſes. Theſe Buildings are made of large Pieces of Timber, joined together, in ſuch Manner, that, in Caſe of Neceſſity, they may, without much Trouble, be looſened, and afterwards replaced as they were before. Hence you may eaſily judge, that all theſe Buildings are portable. Whoever is minded to remove from one part of the City to the other, immediately lays his Houſe on Carts, and tranſports it, with little Expence, wherever he thinks fit. All Buildings in *Muſcovy* are erected in this Manner, excepting ſome Churches, and moſt of the Convents of the Monks, who always take Care to be the beſt accommodated every where. I have even ſeen ſome fortified Cities, the Walls of which are only made of Wood. Houſes of this Kind, in ſo rigid a Climate, as that of *Muſ-*

covy,

may be thought to be as cold, as Icè-Houſes; but I'm convinced, by Experience, of the direct contrary, and can aſſure you, that they are all very warm, nay even hot to Exceſs. *Muſcovy* may, in this Regard be eſteemed not a cold Country, as it is generally ſuppoſed, but a Country abounding with Fire and Smoak. There is hardly a Houſe in *Ruſſia* where the Heat is not intolerable, in the Winter, as well as the Summer. We may therefore very reaſonably conclude, that this contributes not a little to render the *Muſcovites* lazy and ſluggiſh.

You ſee, Sir, how little my Troubles hindered me from making Obſervations in *Muſcovy*. I might extend them yet farther, on the Manners of the *Muſcovites*, as well as their Cuſtoms; but I fear, I ſhall engage in too many Subjects at once, and thereby neglect the principal Occurrences of my Captivity. Give me, therefore, leave to return to what more nearly concerns my ſelf.

Whilſt I employed my ſelf in Architecture, my Steward informed me, that my Releaſement was now talked of in good Earneſt, and that I had nothing to do, but to be of good Heart. *Monſ. de L'Iſle* and his Spouſe ſent me Word, at the ſame Time, that they thought my Affairs in a very good Situation, and that they did not doubt of ſeeing ſpeedily my Troubles at an End. But the Joy, I conceived, at hearing this agreeable News, was of a ſhort Duration. I was ſoon afterwards told, that I muſt not hope for any Anſwer to my Memorial, till her Majeſty's Return. I had enough to do, to appeaſe the firſt Tranſports into which this ſecond News threw me, but Reaſon at laſt got the better, and gave me Reſolution, patiently to expect whatever might befal me.

I received, in the mean Time, numerous Preſents from Mrs. *De L' Iſle*, who frequently ſent me her Cook. This generous Lady loaded me with her

her Benefactions, and uſed her utmoſt Efforts to alleviate the Burden of my Captivity. Her Cook, for his Part, neglected nothing that might give me a clear Inſight into the moſt important Tranſactions of *Europe*. By his Means, I learned, that two notable Battles had been fought, thoſe of *Bitonto*, and *Parma*, and that the Surrender of *Philipſburg* was hourly expected. Such Succeſſes rejoiced me extreamly. I could not, however, but ſecretly envy the immortal Glory, acquired by ſo many brave Officers of my Acquaintance. He, likewiſe, told me, that King *Staniſlaus* was in Safety at *Konigsberg*, that the taking of *Dantzick* had neither weakened nor dejected his Party, and that this City would be reſtored for a Sum of Money. I never doubted, but the *Muſcovites* would exact exorbitant Sums from the Inhabitants of *Dantzick*, which I knew to be the principal Object of their Enterprize. I was informed, moreover, by the ſame Meſſenger, that all the *French* Officers were ſet out for *Narva*, where the Priſoners of War were guarded by two Battalions of *Muſcovites*. An accidental Thought came, on this Occaſion, into my Head, which you perhaps will regard as ſtrange and whimſical. I had been aſſured, that the *French* Troops made a Body of about two thouſand Men, a Number little inferior to that of the *Muſcovites*, by whom they were guarded: I was not unacquainted with the intrepid Courage of the former, and too well convinc'd of the Cowardice of the latter, and the bad Diſcipline they are under. Having conſidered theſe Things, I ſaid within my ſelf, might not the *French* Priſoners find Means to cut off their Guard, to diſarm and maſſacre them, and then to force themſelves a Paſſage, thro the Country. I was not ignorant of the Difficulty which muſt needs attend the Execution of that Enterprize: But the Place occupied by the *French*, near *Narva*,

has always been fertile in extraordinary Events, and I was confirmed in my Opinion by recollecting the Retreat of ten thouſand *Greeks*, under *Xenophon*. The *Greeks* of thoſe Days were certainly not more valorous than the *French* now, and the Route theſe latter muſt take to arrive at a Place of Safety, is not by far ſo long as that, taken by the former. The *French* would thereby have acquired immortal Glory, and the Retreat would have gained as univerſal an Applauſe, as the World to this Day gives to the ten thouſand *Greeks* commanded by *Xenophon*. Let me entreat you, before you cenſure this Scheme as impractible, to examine in the Maps, whether the Route, which the *French* muſt have taken to join the Troops of King *Staniſlaus*, would have rendered the Undertaking utterly impoſſible. Had they exerted their Valour, and undergone ſome Fatigues, I am well aſſured they would ſoon have executed this important Enterprize. As for the *Muſcovites*, by whom they were guarded, nothing could have been more eaſy, than to have got rid of them, and was you as well acquainted with that Nation, as I am, you would be entirely of my Opinion. But to convince you yet more of what I here advance, permit me to add a Word or two more, of the Military State of *Muſcovy*.

As I ſuppoſe you to be already acquainted with their Battalions and Squadrons, I ſhall not take Notice of either of them. They conſiſt of a large Number of Soldiers, but of very few Officers. All theſe Soldiers have of late been very well cloath'd, and their Arms are pretty good, excepting their Swords. They retain, notwithſtanding this, a certain Air, which is by no Means to their Advantage, and which none of them have ever been able to ſhake off. They make a wretched Appearance, and are far from being dextrous. They are well enough made, very robuſt, and ad-

vantage-

advantageouſly ſhaped, but they are, if I may Uſe the Expreſſion, lifeleſs Bodies which are not put in Motion, without great Difficulty. As for their Diſcipline, they are conſtantly exerciſed, and handle their Arms pretty well: But when they come to give Fire, their Emulation only conſiſts, in endeavouring to make the moſt Noiſe, without ever concerning themſelves, whether they hit the Mark, or their Shot is loſt.

They have always appeared to me very much embarraſſed; when they perform their Evolutions.

Nothing ſurprizes me more, than to ſee what a Value they ſet upon their Grenadoes; for not a Day of Exerciſe paſſes, but they throw a prodigious Number of them, and they take a particular Care to chooſe the moſt able Men for Grenadiers. They have hardly any Regard for their Swords, and all that I have ſeen, in the Hands of my Guard, during the whole Courſe of my Captivity, are round-pointed. I could not forbear ſmiling at the Manner whereby they account for this: Thoſe pointed Swords, ſay they, are uſeleſs, as long as we have Bayonets. Poor, ignorant Wretches, not yet to know what Uſe may be made of a Sword! The *Swedes* have; nevertheleſs, formerly taught them the Benefit of this Weapon, which I wonder to find they have ſo ſoon forgot. It is not my Deſign here to cenſure this their Cuſtom, as 'tis not very material, how they Act, provided they know, how to make an Attack, and to defend themſelves.

But this is not all. The *Muſcovite* Troops diſcover neither Emulation, Valour, nor Conduct, Qualities, inſeparable from a good Soldier. Neither Officers, nor Soldiers, are ever ſeen to aim at diſtinguiſhing themſelves by any conſpicuous Action. Neither one nor the other have any Motive for engaging in Military Service, but that of o-

beying the Orders of their Sovereign. Thus have I ſhewn you, in few Words, what Idea we can have of the *Muſcovite* Troops. I have formerly told you their Number, let us now therefore examine what regards their Maintenance.

The Apparel of the *Muſcovite* Troops is pretty good, but their Pay is very bad. Thoſe, who are garriſoned at *Peterſburg*, have only an Allowance of Bread, and about fifteen *French Deniers per diem*. Thoſe, who are in the Inland Countries, are obliged to be contented with only ſeven or eight *Deniers*, a very poor Pay indeed. The Allowance of the Officers is likewiſe, very moderate, and far from being ſufficient to enable them to keep a tolerable Table. However trifling this their Pay may ſeem, it ſuffices nevertheleſs for them, and a larger Salary would be needleſs. The *Muſcovites* are content with a very little. Their ordinary Food is only Bread, with a little Salt, and ſome Water. When they have no Bread, they eat Peaſe, Beans or Vegetables. They are out of Danger of being ſtarved with Hunger, for if they are deſtitute of Bread, Meat and Pulſe, they can browſe upon Graſs, and eat all kind of Roots, without the leaſt Inconvenience attending it. Bodies ſo robuſt might form excellent Troops, were it poſſible to inſpire them with other Souls, and other Minds. The Horſes in *Muſcovy* are endued with very near the ſame Qualities as the Men; for they feed upon whatever they meet with, and are not the leſs vigorous.

Hence you may judge, how eaſily a good General, at the Head of the *Muſcovite* Troops, might ſupport his Army; he would neither ſtand in need of Bread, nor Cattle; a few Pulſe, ſome Herbs and Roots would be more than ſufficient, and theſe Proviſions may be had every where, with little Trouble and Expence. 'Tis happy for the neighbouring

bouring Nations, that thoſe Troops will never be able to render themſelves formidable, and though their Fame in *Europe* is at preſent very great, yet the Time will come, when their Weakneſs and Impotence will be univerſally known. There are not wanting thoſe, who for ſome Time paſt have entertain'd too favourable an Opinion of this Nation. There was hardly a ſingle *Muſcovite* Soldier, before the Siege of *Dantzick*, who had ever ſeen a Muſket fired, and the World has nevertheleſs loaded them with Praiſes, which they by no Means deſerve. People may entertain what Notion they pleaſe of theſe Soldiers, but I ſhould be glad to ſee their Performances in a Battle, and till then, I ſhall hardly be inclined to beſtow any Encomiums on them. I believe, they may ſtand their Ground, for a Time, for they are ſturdy enough; but, at the ſame Time, it is more than probable, they will not be for fighting. *Peter* I. after the Battle of *Narva*, where all his Army was routed, was thoughtful of an Expedient to hinder his Troops from taking to their Flight, but could find no better than that of forming a kind of ſecond Line, behind each Battalion and Squadron, whom he ſtrictly enjoined, to fire upon every one, that ſhould be ſo cowardly as to retreat. This Precaution will, in all Probability, be ſtill made Uſe of, to force their Soldiers to ſtand their Ground, and not be ſo eaſily broken. When they ſee themſelves between two Fires, they may ſometimes perhaps be obliged, to make a Virtue of Neceſſity. But can you imagine, that Troops, who ſtand in Need of ſuch a Spur, can ever fight with Courage and Vigour. I much doubt, or believe rather, that theſe poor *Muſcovites*, ſeeing themſelves between two Fires, will rather ſubmit to be maſſacred and cut to Pieces, without making any great Reſiſtance. But inſtead of detaining you with

theſe Conjectures, let us rather examine the great Exploits performed by theſe Troops, ſince their coming into *Poland*.

In my Paſſage through *Dantzick* I was informed, as I believe I told you before, that the *Muſcovites* had not diſtinguiſhed themſelves by any one conſpicuous Action, during the Siege of that City. This is ſo true, that in the Courſe of ſix or ſeven Months, they could not even gain the Outworks of the Place, though they are at ſome Diſtance from the Town, and only fenced with Palliſedoes. What valiant Deed have they rendered themſelves famous by, ſince the Surrender of that City? They have purſued, and endeavoured, by Force, to reduce the Troops, who followed the Party of King *Staniſlaus*; but hitherto their Efforts have been fruitleſs. The Troops of King *Staniſlaus*, which the *Muſcovites* attempted to overthrow, hardly deſerve the Name of regular Troops. The *Muſcovites*, on the contrary, had, in diverſe Places, ſeveral large Bodies of Troops, in the Field, which were more than ſufficient, for a greater Enterprize. The Troops of King *Staniſlaus*, notwithſtanding this, keep their Ground in *Poland*, traverſe the whole Country, in the very Sight of the *Ruſſian* and *Saxon* Armies, intercept their Convoys, and have inſulted, and even beat their Enemies in ſeveral Skirmiſhes. Hence you may judge, what the Event would have been, if a Body of about fifteen thouſand *French* Foot, had joined the *Poliſh* Cavalry. The *Muſcovites* would, beyond all Doubt, have ſoon be enrouted, and the *Poles* might juſtly have ſaid,

Jam Scythæ laxo meditantur arcu
Cedere Campis.

What

What I here aſſert would infallibly have happened, and we ſhould ſoon have ſeen the *Muſcovites* under a Neceſſity of evacuating *Poland*. A General who is but never ſo little acquainted with the *Ruſſian* Troops, would meet with no great Difficulty in ſubduing them. He need only to attack and preſs upon them vigorouſly, without giving them Time to recollect themſelves, and then harraſs them by Marches, and Counter-Marches, which would infallibly draw them into ſeveral Blunders. Let them but be fatigued and tired out, with continual Motion, Day and Night, for ſome Time, and you may depend upon ſeeing theſe Graſs-Eaters, at other Times ſo vigorous, lye ſprawling on the Ground, and giving way to all-powerful Sleep. There is not a Nation in the World, that require more frequent and longer Sleep than the *Muſcovites*. I am ſure, that if after they have been thus kept in Motion, an Enemy ſhould fall upon and ſurprize them, he would find them all in a profound Sleep. As they know their Infirmity in this Reſpect, they commonly take Care, to fortify their Entrenchments ſufficiently, or to gain ſome advantageous Poſt. The Conduct of a General conſiſts, therefore, in diſlodging and decoying them into a Place, where they may be attacked; after which, nothing farther is requiſite, than to advance towards them briſkly, with Sword in Hand, to attack them vigorouſly, and to fall upon them, without regarding their firſt Fire. And, in this Manner, they are certainly routed, beyond a Poſſibility of rallying. But I have detained you long enough on this Subject; and I likewiſe, hear a Diſcharge of Artillery, which probably proclaims the *Czarina*'s Arrival. Rejoice with me, who am on the Point of ſeeing my Miſeries, and my Adventures at an End. My next Letter will bring you nothing but agreeable Tidings. What a Happi-

neſs it will be to me, to quit a Country in which I have endured innumerable Troubles and Misfortunes! I now pleaſe my ſelf with the Hopes of finding ſoon ſome agreeable Solitude, where I may

Ducere ſollicita jucunda oblivia vitæ.

LETTER XI.

SIR,

BEFORE I begun to write this Letter, I intended only to adviſe you, that I was freed from my Captivity, and upon the Point of quitting *Muſcovy*. Upon ſecond Thoughts, I altered my Deſign, and believed it proper to continue the Hiſtory of my Captivity, and to inform you of the Iſſue of my Adventures. The Peruſal of this laſt Letter will, perhaps, give you Cauſe to be ſurprized at the Conſtancy, with which I have undergone ſo many different Trials, as would, perhaps, have thrown any one, but my ſelf, into Deſpair; I have many a Time earneſtly wiſhed you an Eye-Witneſs of the Evils I have ſtruggled with, and of the Heroick Courage with which I have born them. I am not induced to ſpeak in this Manner, either out of Preſumption, or with any Deſign of attracting your Praiſes: The Familiarity, you Honour me with, is ſuch, that I may tell you my Mind without any Diſguiſe, and you know me ſo well, that you cannot think me capable of deceiving you. I am not ignorant, and I think it my Duty to acknowledge, that the Hand

of

of the Almighty, after having humbled me, has graciouſly vouchſafed me Relief, to prevent my total Fall. 'Tis the ſame Hand, that looſened my Chains, after having ſuffered me to be bound with them, and after a rigid Captivity has ſet me at Liberty, that, in fine, after having led me to the very Brink of the Grave, has reſtored me, as it were by a Miracle, to my Health. Theſe Calamities, which I have undergone, ſeem, by a providential Diſpoſition, to have been intended to recall me from my paſt Errors. *Hinc omne Principium, huc refer exitum.*

But to continue the Sequel of my Adventures, and leave theſe Reflexions. In my laſt I informed you, that it had been ſignified to me, I could not be releaſed from Priſon, and obtain my entire Liberty, till the *Czarina*'s Return, and that, with the utmoſt Impatience, I waited for the happy Moment. This gave me Room to hope, that my Liberty would then, in good Earneſt, be thought of. I found, nevertheleſs, maugre all theſe Promiſes, no ſmall Difficulty, to bring my Affairs to an End. I could not conceive how they could be ſo long put off, after having been in the Hands of ſuch eminent Miniſters. The Matter was not of ſo great Importance, but they might have been concluded in one Day. The only Points they had to examine, were, whether I was to be deemed a Criminal in *Muſcovy*, for having had an Adventure in *France*, and whether I ought to be detained Priſoner, for having travelled by a fictitious Name? Theſe were, in Reality, all the Crimes I could be accuſed of, and for which I had been arreſted.

Whilſt I was thus in Hopes every Minute of being ſet at Liberty, I was ſeized with a freſh Diſtemper, which was the more fatal, as I had not then perfectly recovered my former Strength. A certain kind of Wine, which had been given me to drink, without my perceiving immediately that it was damaged, cauſed this Indiſpoſition. I was ſoon reduced

duced to a very pitiful State. My Sickneſs was violent, it increaſed daily, and I had no Proſpect of any Remedy. Since they were ſo cruel, as to refuſe me a Phyſician, at a Time, when I ſtood yet more in Need of one, I could not expect they would grant me that Favour now. After having, for ſome Days, endured the moſt exquiſite Pains, I found my ſelf at laſt neceſſitated to demand an Interpreter.

I obtained one at Length, after many Prayers and Intreaties, who came to me on the 18th of *September*. Take Notice, I beſeech you of this Epoch, and recollect, what I mentioned of it formerly. I thought proper to acquaint this Perſon with my Condition: I told him, that I had Occaſion for a Phyſician, and ſhould be glad, if Mr. *Du Vernoi*, Profeſſor of Anatomy, might be permitted to viſit me. I had the Pleaſure, the next Day, of ſeeing Mr. *Du Vernoi* come into my Priſon, accompanied by my Interpreter. I leave you to judge how much I rejoiced to ſee him. I thought my ſelf happy in being allowed to converſe with a reaſonable Creature, a Satisfaction, I had not enjoyed for a very long Time. His Preſence only was in Part my Cure: But I repreſented my Caſe to him, and he aſſured me, that I ſhould have all the Aſſiſtance I might ſtand in Need of. The Interpreter, who ſtayed with us, whilſt I diſcourſed with this Gentleman, acquitted himſelf of his Commiſſion, with a moſt ſurprizing Dexterity. He had doubtleſs been charged to hearken attentively to whatever was ſpoke, in Order to make his Report of it afterwards: For, when I chanced to drop a few *Latin* Words, which were unintelligible to him, he deſired to know what I ſaid. I ſatisfied his Curioſity, and even added, that I had no Secret to communicate to any one, and that the only Thing I had long earneſtly wiſhed for, was, to inform the *Czarina*, and her Miniſters, of all my Affairs. Diffi-

dence

dence is really carried to too great a Height in *Muſcovy*, even in Matters of the leaſt Importance.

Mr. *Du Vernoi* retired, after a pretty long Viſit, with a Promiſe to return, and keep me Company all the next Day. This Favour, which I little expected, occaſioned me to think, that I ſhould now meet with different Treatment, and not fail of being ſoon ſet at Liberty. But theſe Hopes, which appeared ſo well grounded, were of a very ſhort Duration. Mr. *Du Vernoi*, who had promiſed to viſit me the next Day, never came, and in vain I expected him the Day following; in ſhort, I ſaw him no more during my Captivity. I could never be apprized by any one what could be the Cauſe of this Diſappointment. Mr. *Du Vernoi* was a Gentleman of too much Diſcretion to mention it to me, but I could eaſily conceive the Motive. As I was well aſſured, that this celebrated Anatomiſt, would have performed his Promiſe, I ſoon conjectured, that he had received an Order to the contrary, of which I am perſuaded for the following Reaſon: In the Converſation I had with him, I entered into a circumſtantial Account of the Diſeaſe I had laboured under, at my Departure from *Muſcow*, without, however, mentioning my Suſpicion of having been poiſoned. The Interpreter, who heard, all I ſaid, may be preſumed to have acquainted the Miniſters therewith, and they being apprehenſive this Myſtery of Iniquity would be detected, enjoined Mr. *Du Vernoi* to pay me no farther Viſits. To ſupply the Want of a Phyſician, they ſent me ſome Medicines, by an unknown Perſon. I reſolved not to make Uſe of any of their Drugs, but to wait for my Cure from the Strength of my Conſtitution only. The Relief I every Day received from Mr. *De L' Iſle* and his Spouſe, and which ſufficed for the beſt Part of my Neceſſities, contributed not a little to the Recovery of my Health. I may juſtly

ſay,

ſay, that to them I am indebted for my Life; for, had I not met with this Succour, from their Hands, I muſt infallibly have ſunk under the Weight of my Miſeries.

The *Muſcovites* not only refuſed me what was requiſite for my Health, as well as my Food, but likewiſe ſuffered me to be almoſt naked. This cruel Treatment obliged me once more to aſk for an Interpreter. My Requeſt was complied with, and I deſired him to remonſtrate to thoſe Gentlemen, that "ſince the Proofs I had given of my Innocence ap- "peared to them not ſufficiently convincing, for "my Releaſement, and ſince the Motive of Chri- "ſtian Charity was not ſtrong enough to induce "them to grant me the Aſſiſtance, requiſite for my "Health, I hoped at leaſt, that they would ſo far "regard the Glory of her Majeſty's Name, as "not to reduce me to ſo miſerable a Condition, to "be even deſtitute of wherewithal to cover my Na- "kedneſs, and that, in ſhort, they would order "the Cloaths, which were in my Trunk, to be de- "livered to me, for my Uſe." This Interpreter returned the next Morning, and, in Anſwer to my Deſire, ſaid, that a Preſent of ten Rubles had been ordered for cloathing me. Diſſatisfied with this Anſwer, I told him, that I did not want their Money, and that, if they would not grant me my Cloaths, I begged they would ſend me a Taylor, whom I might order to make me what I ſtood in Need of. The Interpreter retired, and I ſaw, after this, neither a Taylor, nor my Cloaths, inſomuch, that I was obliged to remain in my Priſon half naked, tho the cold Seaſon was already pretty far advanced.

It may not be improper here to take Notice, that nothing could be done without the preciſe Order of the Senate, and that conſequently it is they who have been the Cauſe of all the bad Treatment

I have

I have met with. Theſe Gentlemen were, at that ſame Time, once more pleaſed to oblige me to ſhift my Priſon, and as they begun to feel the Cold in the new Apartment they were in, removed to their former Houſe, which had been repaired, and ſent me to that, which they left. This laſt Change was no Inconvenience, for I was in a larger Place, where I enjoyed a greater Tranquility.

I ſilently paſs by a large Number of Occurrences of little Importance, as I hope, that this Letter will be the laſt, which I ſhall write to you; for I ſhould never have done, were I to attempt an accurate Account of every Circumſtance of my Captivity. I ſhall rather now entertain you with an Account of my Releaſement, and the Means, that were made Uſe of to procure it. I ſhall with much greater Pleaſure relate theſe Circumſtances, and inform you of the happy Hour when I heard this good News, than of the Calamities I have undergone ſince the Beginning of my Impriſonment.

It was the 16th of *October*, when Word was brought me, that I ſhould ſoon be ſet at Liberty. This News, which was certainly the moſt agreeable I ever received in my Life, was communicated to me, that Day, very early, by a *German* Secretary, who was accompanied by an Interpreter. He told me in the *Czarina*'s Name, that I was releaſed, and that a hundred Rubles had been granted for my Travelling Charges. I returned theſe Gentlemen Thanks for the Trouble they had taken, aſſuring them at the ſame Time, that I ſhould receive whatever ſhould be offered me, by Her Majeſty's Order, with a moſt profound Deference. They aſked me then, whether I had any further Commands, to which I replied, that I deſired nothing elſe, but that they would prepare the neceſſary Paſſes for my ſpeedy Departure. This was all the Diſcourſe I had with thoſe Meſſengers. But

I repeated

I repeated my Entreaty to the Interpreter, to procure me the Key of my Trunk, in order to come at ſome Cloaths, that I might pay a Viſit to my Friends. He promiſed inſtantly to comply with my Deſire.

Here I imagine I ſee you congratulating me; with a ſmiling and ſatisfied Countenance, on this happy Change, but moderate, I beſeech you, for ſome Time at leaſt, your Tranſports of Joy. This News was ſtill only an Amuſement. In vain I expected, during the whole Day, to ſee them come and open my Trunk, and diſcharge my Guard. I eat nothing but a Morſel of dry Bread; for as I propoſed to Dine with Mr. *De L'Iſle*, I had provided nothing. The next Day I ſaw none but my Steward, who gave me ſome Victuals, without telling me a Word of what had paſſed. At Length, on the 18th, that remarkable Epoch, I was honoured with a kind of Ambaſſy, conſiſting of an Interpreter, three or four Clerks, and ſeveral other Perſons. The Interpreter broke Silence and ſaid, that he brought a hundred Rubles, to give me as a Preſent from her Majeſty. I anſwered, that I ſhould receive them with a profound Reſpect, and that he need only lay them on the Table. This he refuſed to do, under Pretence, that I muſt firſt count them. To this, I replied, that it would not become me to be ſo ſcrupulous in what I received as a free Gift: But he having renewed his Inſtances, and told me, that he muſt have a Receipt, I no longer heſitated at doing what he deſired. He then gave me the Key of my Trunk, which I opened in his Preſence, ſhewing him, that there were a Sword and two Piſtols. I would gladly have prevailed on him to diſcharge my Guard, but he gave me to underſtand, that he could not take ſo much upon himſelf, having received no Orders for that Purpoſe. He then aſked me, what Route I intended

tended to take, when I departed, and whether I chose to go to *Dantzick*, or *Lubeck*. I answered, that my Design was not to repair to either of those Cities, and that I should chuse to travel by Land, not by Sea. He told me, that I would not be permitted to go by Land, and that Orders had already been given for my imbarking.

This Procedure appeared very singular, and even extravagant; upon which I told my Interpreter, that I would write two or three Words, to beg, that this Order might be countermanded. He told me, that he could not take any Writing from my Hands. I desire then, said I, you would tell those who sent you, that I little value my Liberty, if it cannot be granted me, but on Condition of my going to Sea, in the infirm State of Health I am reduced to, and in so advanced a Season, that my Life would be endangered by such a Voyage, which I could never believe to be her Majesty's Intention. Whilst I was thus discoursing with him, he took Occasion to ask, what induced me to refuse a Post in the *Russian* Army. I perceived by the Manner, wherein he asked this Question, that it was only to pump me, I, therefore, gave him no other Reply, than that I did not desire any Employment, and that my Sickness had rendered me incapable of Service. This last Question gave me very great Uneasiness, for I should have been very sorry, to be obliged to remain in *Muscovy*. But thus our Conversation ended.

In this Manner I was set at Liberty, as they called it, though I was still accompanied by my Guard, of whom one had always his Sword drawn. My Steward came soon after the Interpreter was gone, and told me, that I must no longer expect to be dieted as I had been, but must provide my self with all Necessaries. I was, at first, concerned at this News, but, when I considered, that Mr.

De L'Isle

De L' Iſle and his Lady would not fail to continue their kind Aſſiſtances, I reſolved to acquaint them with all that had paſſed, and beg they would favour me with a Viſit. My Steward, who undertook to carry this Meſſage himſelf, apprized them of my Deſire, and they ſoon came to ſee me.

O qui complexus & gaudia quanta fuere.

This Interview made me forget all I had ſuffered in *Muſcovy*. I then recollected all the Tokens of Friendſhip I had received from thoſe generous Perſons, in order to expreſs my grateful Acknowledgments. I was ſo touched with a Senſe of their Benefactions, that I could not forbear ſhedding ſome Tears. They both anſwered the Proteſtations I made, in Terms, which ſtill augmented my Tenderneſs. After the firſt Tranſports of Joy, which Hearts ſuſceptible of a real Friendſhip always feel on the like Occaſions, Mrs. *De L' Iſle* was thoughtful of giving me freſh Marks of her Benevolence. As ſhe knew, that I was on the Point of undertaking a long and fatiguing Journey, ſhe deſired to ſee the few Cloaths they had left me, and having found my Linnen in a frightful Condition, ſhe ſent the greateſt Part of it to her Houſe to be mended, that it might ſerve me during my Journey. Could Friendſhip be carried to a greater Height? But what farther Kindneſs did not ſhe ſhew me, even till the very Moment of my Departure! She paid me many charitable Viſits, provided me with Diet, and all other Neceſſaries, and in ſhort, omitted Nothing, wherein ſhe could be in the leaſt ſerviceable to me. Having been informed, that I eagerly wiſhed, to know what had paſſed in *Europe* during my Pilgrimage and Captivity, to ſatisfy my Curioſity on that Head, ſhe found Means of conveying to me all the News-Papers. The Service ſhe did me, on

that

that Occaſion, was one of thoſe, of which I was moſt truly ſenſible.

This firſt Viſit was pretty long, and they came the very next Day again, accompanied by Mr. *Du Vernoi*. I told this Gentleman, that I did not, in the leaſt, doubt but he would have continued to viſit me, had he not been forbid, and that I thought my ſelf never the leſs oblig'd to him. They ſpent great Part of that Day in my Chamber, and nothing could be a greater Satisfaction to me, than an Opportunity of converſing with ſo agreeable Company, after having been, during the Space of more than a Year, as it were deaf and dumb. I might then very juſtly ſay: *Verba intermiſſa retento*. Not a Day paſſed but they viſited me, and eſpecially Mrs. *De L'Iſle*, who gave me each Time ſome new Marks of her Benevolence.

Nothing hindered the Completion of my Happineſs, but the Reſolution that had been anew taken, to oblige me to go away by Sea. The Weather happened luckily for me to be very froſty at the Time of my intended Departure, inſomuch, that thoſe who had already laid out my Way, were obliged to change their firſt Deſign, and to grant what I had ſo earneſtly deſired. The River was in a few Days frozen up, and the Way to *Croonſtad*, which I was to have taken, was no longer practicable. Providence ſeemed deſignedly to fruſtrate all the wicked Deſigns of my Enemies, and to perform continual Miracles in my Behalf. *Nemo tam pater quàm Deus.*

Pleaſed with the Change, which had happened, I thought of nothing more than making the neceſſary Preparations for my Departure. I only feared, the *Muſcovites* would find ſome Pretence or other for laying freſh Obſtacles in my Way. They had deceived me ſo often, that I could no longer depend on their Word. And, indeed, though it

had already been declared to me, in her Majesty's Name, that I was at Liberty, and that, to defray the Expence of my Journey, the Sum of 100 Rubles had been given me, I was still confined in my Prison, and continued to be under the Inspection of a Guard, who watched all my Steps. I could not, I confess, conceive the Cause of this Proceeding: I was told, on the one Hand, that I was entirely released, and my Guard, on the other Side, received strict Orders, not to let me go out of their Sight. I looked upon the Liberty they had given me to make use of my Sword and Pistols, as a Snare, laid for me, to draw me into some Quarrel, that they might have a fresh Pretence, to detain me in Prison. They sent, besides, many People into my Prison, and especially my late Steward, to persuade me to enter into Service in the *Czarina*'s Troops. These Persons I looked upon as so many Spies, whom I had Reason to distrust. However, not to provoke their Rage, I alledged the same Excuses, which I had before made to the Interpreter, without expressing the least Discontent at the Usage I had received. They thought, perhaps, that, since I came into *Muscovy* with a View of procuring some Post in the Army, I should not refuse to accept of an advantageous Offer. But these Gentlemen were grosly mistaken, I should rather have chosen to spend the Residue of my Days in a Desart, than to live among them. This may perhaps be the Effect of Prejudice, but I look upon *Muscovy* as a Place of Banishment, where some few Foreigners are the only sociable Creatures, that are to be met with.

Such was the Situation of my Affairs, when Mr. *De L'Isle* and his Wife, who still continued to visit me, invited me to dine with them, and spend a Day at their House. They probably knew, that Favour would not be denied me, and that I should

obtain

obtain it without any Difficulty. I therefore made the Requeſt, and found it immediately complied with. My former Steward, with ſeveral others, were ordered, the firſt Day of my going abroad, narrowly to watch my Steps. Juſt before I went out of my Priſon, I told him, that I hoped I might now have a Barber, and not be at the Trouble of ſhaving my ſelf. To this he replied, that he knew not whether I could be allow'd one, but that he would go and enquire. At his Return, he told me, I might be ſhaved, but muſt leave my Sword in my Chamber. I obeyed, and went to Mr. *De L'Iſle*'s, where I had the Pleaſure of ſpending the reſt of the Day.

I cannot expreſs the Joy, with which I was received in that Houſe, where even the Servants endeavoured to outvie each other in rendring me their Services. I had, that Day, no Cauſe to complain of the Behaviour of my Guard, but they afterwards carried their Inſolence to ſuch an Exceſs, that I reſolved to go out no more. At the ſame Time, I acquainted the Miniſters with all that had paſſed, declaring, that I choſe rather to continue in my Priſon, than to be thus expoſed to the abuſive Treatment of my Guard, who had not the leaſt Regard for me, and behaved as diſreſpectfully to the Perſons, to whoſe Houſes I was invited. As I received no Anſwer, I choſe to remain quietly in my Chamber, 'till I could obtain Leave to go abroad alone. Orders were a few Days after given to my Guard to ſheath their Swords, and to withdraw into my Anti-Chamber. This was the firſt Time, during a whole Year, that I had been alone, without any one to inſpect my Actions. It is ſomewhat uncommon, that a Perſon, confined to a narrow Priſon, ſhould ſo ardently wiſh to be deprived of all Company: But this was, nevertheleſs, my Caſe; for an entire Solitude was to me much more agree-

able, than to be always infeſted with the Company of thoſe Animals.

All neceſſary Preparations were, in the mean Time, made for my Journey, and nothing farther was wanting for my Departure, but the Paſſes they had promiſed me. Some Papers, which I had been robbed of at *Caſan*, were ſtill in the Hands of the *Muſcovites*. But they were not ſo very momentous, as to give me any Uneaſineſs. I had already, for ſeveral Days, made preſſing Inſtances for Leave to depart, but having met with no Anſwer, I wrote a ſhort Memorial, wherein " I remonſtrated to " thoſe Gentlemen, that a longer Stay would put " me to greater Expences, and that I ſhould be " thereby reduced to a Want of Money for my " Journey. I likewiſe begged, that they would " procure me Paſſes from the Miniſters of thoſe " Princes, through whoſe Dominions I was to " paſs, in Order to return to *Italy*. I deſired, in " the laſt Place, that they would reſtore my Pa- " pers, and, if they thought, that the ſhort Journal " from *Peterſburg* to *Caſan* contained any Thing " myſterious, they were welcome to keep it. I " ſaid the ſame with Regard to another Paper, in " which I had made ſeveral Obſervations on the " *Wolga*, and told them, that they were extracted " from *Olearius*." After I had finiſhed this Memorial, I would have given it to an Interpreter, who came for a freſh Receipt for the 100 Rubles, which the *Czarina* had preſented me with. But he refuſed to receive it, and I was obliged to tell him the Contents of it. I was too well acquainted with the *Muſcovites*, to be in the leaſt ſurprized at this Procedure, I eaſily gueſſed at the Inducements they had not to hear me. Give me Leave to acquaint you with this whole Affair, which is of no great Honour to theſe Gentlemen.

You

You may remember, I told you before, that I had been robbed of Part of thoſe Cloaths and Effects, which were locked up in my Trunk. In order therefore, to prevent my coming to any Expoſtulation on that Head, they thought proper to forbid every Body to receive any Repreſentation or Writing from my Hands. They ſuppoſed, without Doubt, that the Sum given me, was more than ſufficient to make good the Loſs I had ſuſtained, by what had been taken from me. But they were ſtrangely miſtaken, for the Damage was very conſiderable. This, Sir, was the only Motive, that induced them not to give Ear to me, and to refuſe the Acceptance of any Papers I might offer. Such is the Treatment, a Stranger is to expect in *Muſcovy*, where it is a very difficult Matter to procure Juſtice. But I was their Paſtime, on many other Occaſions, and I may truly ſay, that I was their Victim, from the firſt Hour of my Captivity, till the Moment of my Departure. Beſides the many Inſtances I have given you of this, I beg leave to mention one more.

More than a Month had paſſed ſince it had been ſignified to me, that I was at Liberty, and yet Icould not be permitted to quit the Country. This Slowneſs of proceeding made me very uneaſy, and gave me ſome Suſpicions. I feared a Propoſal of ſtaying in *Muſcovy*, and was not ignorant of the Danger that would attend a Refuſal of an Offer in their Troops.

On the 22d of *November*, it was at laſt told me, I might ſet out directly. This Meſſage was brought me by my former Steward, who at the ſame Time aſked me how many Horſes I would have. I told him, that I ſhould have Occaſion for four, but was reſolved not to go, till I had received my Writings, and the neceſſary Paſſes. An Interpreter came, the next Day, to bring me 50 Rubles,

which he had been ordered to give me, and aſſured me, that the following Day was fixed upon for my Departure. I anſwered, that the Sum, which the *Czarina* had already been pleas'd to ſend me, was ſufficient to defray the Expence of my Journey, but when he replied, that he offered me this farther Sum by Her Majeſty's Order, I could not but accept of it, with Deference, and give him a Receipt for it. I had too great a Veneration for the Name of the *Czarina*, not to receive moſt ſubmiſſively whatever could be offered me by her Orders; otherwiſe, I aſſure you, I ſhould have flatly refus'd this Money, as I was not deſtitute of wherewithal to ſupply all my Wants.

As I no longer doubted of going the next Day, after the Aſſurances I had juſt before received, I gave immediate Notice thereof to Mr. *De L 'Iſle*, and his Spouſe, who came directly with Mr. *Du Vernoi*, to ſpend the Day with me. Though I had now Reaſon to think my ſelf at the Height of my Wiſhes, yet my parting from them very much affected me. The Regret with which I left Mr. *De L' Iſle* and his Spouſe, was the greater, as I had no Hopes of ever ſeeing them again, nor of giving them any Tokens of my Friendſhip and Acknowledgement. Mrs. *De L' Iſle*, not ſatisfied with the Favours ſhe had till then beſtowed on me, would again furniſh me with a large Quantity of Proviſions.

Every Thing was ready for my Departure, the next Day, which was the 24th, when a Meſſenger came and told me, that I muſt ſtill wait till the 26th, which was to be the Day of my entire Deliverance. My Papers were ſent me at Ten in the Morning, but they retained Part of them, with the Journal, I mentioned above. I was then aſked, when I intended to ſet out, and, having anſwered, the ſooner the better, they ſaid they would go and fetch the Horſes. As for the Paſſes which I had

ſo

ſo often demanded, they promiſed indeed, that I ſhould have them, but never performed their Promiſe. Was not this an Inſtance of crying Injuſtice, thus to oblige a Man to travel without a Paſs, in the Situation which the Affairs of *Europe* were then in? Their being themſelves ſo ſcrupulous on that Head, makes me the more aſtoniſhed at it, for if a Stranger happens unfortunately to come into their Country, without being provided with one, he is ſure to be expoſed to Slavery for ſeveral Years. The only Paſs I could obtain was in the *Muſcovite* Language, and you ſhall ſoon ſee, what Terms it was conceived in. But I muſt leave this Subject, and proceed to an Account of my Journey.

I ſet out from *Peterſburg* at four o' Clock, in a Sled, and took the Road for *Narva*, from whence having continued my Journey, with Speed and Succeſs, I arrived at *Riga*, on the third of *December*, in the Afternoon. The Perſon who had been appointed my Guide, carried me to the Houſe of General *Felkerſham*. That Gentleman gave me a very kind Reception, and treated me in a Manner, that ſhewed the Difference between a *German* and a *Muſcovite*. After the firſt Compliment, he told me, that I need only appoint the Time, when I intended to continue my Journey, and he would give the neceſſary Orders. I replied, that I was entirely dependant on his Pleaſure, but ſince he was ſo kind as to give me my Choice, I begged he would let me depart as ſoon as poſſible. He anſwered in the moſt obliging Terms, that I might go inſtantly, if I pleas'd, but that he hoped, I would, at leaſt, honour him with my Company that Night. I ſignified to him, that I was not in a Condition to accept ſo kind an Offer, and being very weary, begged he would permit me to look out for a Lodging, that I might immediately go to Reſt. After having renewed his Intreaties,

he ſuffered me to go, and by his Order I was lodg'd in a Houſe near his, where he ſent me a very elegant Supper. Every Thing was prepared for my Departure the next Morning. As I had no Time to loſe, I repaired immediately to the General, to take my Leave of him, and to expreſs my moſt grateful Acknowledgments. He introduced me into his Lady's Apartment, to drink a Diſh of Tea. I there found two very beautiful and accompliſhed Ladies, which made me not a little aſhamed, to appear in their Preſence, in a Dreſs little better than that of a Savage. After having breakfaſted, I I retired, very well ſatisfied with the Reception I had met with.

I then ſet out with a Secretary, a well-bred Man, who had Orders to accompany me as far as the Confines of *Livonia*. So great a Thaw had happened, that in croſſing the *Dwina*, I found the Water a Foot deep above the Ice, inſomuch that I travelled that Day more by Water, than by Land. I lay by that Night, and when I was about to depart, the next Morning, Mr. Secretary, in a very polite Manner, addreſſed himſelf to me, and paid me a *Muſcovite* Compliment, which he had probably been charged with. He delivered to me a *German* Paſs, and told me, that, by Her Majeſty's Order, he gave me Notice, I was now entirely at Liberty, but that I was forbid ever to ſet Foot in the *Muſcovite* Dominions again. At firſt, this Compliment greatly enraged me, but I had a ſufficient Command over my Paſſion, to moderate it, and not to give him the Anſwer it deſerved. I only told him, that they had Room to think ſuch a Prohibition needleſs, but ſince it had been thought neceſſary, he might aſſure his Maſters, that the *Czarina*'s Orders ſhould be punctually obſerved.

What think you, Sir, of this laſt Step? Was this a Compliment to make to a Man, whom they had

had found as innocent as a Lamb? I ought to have informed thoſe Gentlemen, that, if it ſhould ever be my Fate to come into their Country again, it ſhould be in ſo good Company, that they would find it a little more difficult to ſeize my Sword, than at my Arrival at *Caſan*, and that I never intended to appear again in *Muſcovy*, unleſs it was with Fire and Sword. But am I not to blame, to wiſh them Harm? Was it not a great Favour to permit me thus to go out of their Country, and did I not quit it at an eaſy Rate, after having been in Danger of being ſhut up and buried there for Life? For, by the *Muſcovite* Politicks, a Man is to be irretrieveably undone, after they have proceeded ſo far, as to abuſe him, as they had done me, without a juſt Pretence; unleſs they would endeavour to detain him by ſuch kind Treatment as might make him forget all that is paſt. They have therefore not uſed me with that Rigour, which is preſcribed by their Politicks, and I ought conſequently to acknowledge my ſelf obliged to them. I am not leſs beholden to them for ſuffering me to depart: For the Life, I could have led in *Muſcovy*, I ſhould have eſteemed as a continual Death. They probably thought, that an *Italian* could never pardon them for the bad Uſage he had received from their Hands, and, following the Maxims of a ſalutary Policy, they choſe rather to have an Enemy without Doors, than in their own Country. They judged it perhaps likewiſe improper, to detain a Man, who would not be governed by their Pleaſure, though a Slave, and who might ſome Time or other find Acceſs to a Perſon, from whom they carefully conceal thoſe Things, which ſhe ought to be beſt acquainted with. To all theſe Motives may be added, that the *Muſcovites* are already burthened with many Strangers, whom they mortally hate, and that they are very unwilling to ſee any more ſettled among

among them. But be that as it will, I am reſolved to forget them, and to abandon them to their own Remorſe; if they are capable of having any.

Here I ſhould conclude my Letter, and the Recital of my Adventures; for, ſince the *Muſcovites* will not be farther mentioned, you muſt not expect to hear any Thing extraordinary, or that may excite your Curioſity. But, *Reſtabat Fatis aliquid*, of which I muſt give you an Account.

After having left my Secretary, I proceeded to *Mittau*, the Capital of *Courland*, where I was obliged to ſtop. As I found it impoſſible to travel any farther in a Sled, becauſe of the Thaw, I was neceſſitated there to hire a Wheel-carriage. I got one made after the Manner of the Country, to carry me as far as *Memmel*, the firſt City in *Pruſſia*. In this Journey I met with diverſe Adventures. The firſt of theſe appears ſomewhat Romantick, but is nevertheleſs very true. Being arrived, the firſt Day, towards the Evening, at an Inn, which was the only one, in a vaſt Foreſt, I was going inſtantly to Bed, without my Supper, the Houſe not affording any Thing. No ſooner was I gone into my Chamber, than I heard a great Noiſe at the Door of the Houſe, and fancied I heard ſomebody ſpeak *French*. I went out immediately, and having aſked whether I had not heard *Freneh* ſpoken, I was anſwered in the Affirmative. I then addreſſed my ſelf to theſe Strangers, ſaying, Come in, Gentlemen, this indeed is a very bad Inn, you will find nothing to eat here, but you will meet with a Perſon, who will be very glad of your Company. I ſaw, at the ſame Time, a Man of a graceful Aſpect entring, but as he had a large Cap on, I could not well diſtinguiſh his Face. When we paid each other our mutual Compliments of Civility, I thought I heard a Voice, well known to me, and mine had the ſame Effect on him. Af-

ter having view'd each other attentively, we both recollected our ſelves, and embraced one another, not without being ſtruck with Surprize, at meeting in this Place. This Accident ſeemed to give him ſome Diſquiet, for he had ſtrong Reaſons, not to diſcover himſelf to any Body. He begged I would entirely forget his Name, after which we diſcourſed together, and had many Subjects to entertain each other upon.

I aſked him ſeveral Queſtions very preſſingly, and he ſatisfied my Curioſity in many Points. He happened, fortunately for me, to have ſome good Proviſions, which furniſhed us a comfortable Supper, and then we went to Reſt. As he came from the ſame Country, which I had juſt before left, and intended to go the ſame Way, which I took, we ſet out together the next Morning, and put up at the ſame Inn at Night. When I, however, perceived, that he could not recover from his firſt Uneaſineſs, and found, beſides, I was a Burden to him, I reſolved to wiſh him a good Journey, and parted with him the more willingly, as my Horſes, being not ſo good as his, could hardly keep Pace with him.

You expect perhaps ſome farther Account of this Adventure, but I am tied down to Silence, and will perform the Promiſe I made of inviolable Secrecy; which, if I ſhould not, I muſt unavoidably inform you of certain Matters, which are ſtill of too great Importance. An Adventure very different from this, will be better worth your Notice, by which you may ſee, what a Man muſt expect, who has once begun to be unfortunate.

The tenth Day a general Thaw enſued, and the Roads were extreamly bad. Having met with Places, that appeared very dangerous, I ſent my Poſtilion to ſound them, and he found that they could not be paſſed with Safety. We went a great

way

way about in Search of another Paſſage. My Guide, who thought he had found a good one, led me into a kind of Pit, the only one, perhaps, in the whole Country, in which we were almoſt buried, with our Horſes and Carriage. It was not without great Difficulty we got out, and it was a ſingular good Fortune, that we did not loſe our Lives by this Accident. To ſuffer Shipwreck by Sea, to be caſt away in a Lake, or in a River, are Things common: Accidents of that Kind happen daily: But to meet with that Misfortune by Land, in the midſt of arable Ground, this can never happen to any one, but him, who, *Minxit in patrios cineres.*

In this Condition, I was obliged to travel, four or five Hours-Journey, before we came to an Inn. That we came to was tolerably good, and I was obliged to ſtay there three Days to cleanſe my ſelf. My Goods were all entirely ſpoiled, and eſpecially my Writings, which I regretted more than all the reſt. I arrived, however, the 15th at *Memmel*, where I was obliged to take a Sled to go to *Konigſburg*. There could not poſſibly be a worſe Way than this proved. The Ice was in many Places cracked, and ſometimes ſo covered with Water, that it was not poſſible to get forwards. I never, in my Life, had ſo painful and fatiguing a Journey; and I cannot better compare the Danger I was in, than to that of being obliged to ſtand one's Ground, againſt a Battery of well-placed Cannon. Nevertheleſs, the ſame Supreme Being, who, for ſome Time, had only laid a heavy Burden upon me with one Hand, to relieve me with the other, conducted me ſafe to *Konigſburg*, the laſt Day of the Year 1734.

When I came into the City, I found I was a Spectacle to every Body; for I pretty much reſembled either the Prodigal Son, or ſome Fugitive Slave. I was carried before General *Cat*, who

doubtleſs

doubtleſs perceived the Confuſion I was in, to appear before him, in that Equipage, and, therefore, was ſo good to diſpatch me immediately. I took my Lodging in the firſt Inn I came at, and, at my Entrance into it, offered up my Prayers to Heaven, to vouchſafe me ſome Reſt from my Labour.

Contenti noſtris, Di, precor, eſto, malis.

Being arrived at *Konigſburg*, I thought it was now out of the Power of the *Muſcovites* to give me any new Uneaſineſs: But I found my ſelf miſtaken, and met with a freſh Inſtance of their Malice and Baſeneſs. The Caſe was this. I have already told you, that at my Departure from *Peterſburg*, I required ſeveral Paſſes, which were refuſed me, and that they only gave me one in the *Muſcovite* Tongue. At *Riga*, they gave me another in *German*, of which I underſtood as little as of the former. When I came before General *Cat*, at *Peterſburg*, I ſhewed him theſe Paſſes; and notwithſtanding the powerful Reaſons which might have induced him to make me paſs a ſtrict Examination, he took no Notice of the Paſſes, but gave me Leave to go and repoſe my ſelf.

The next Morning, I gave them to my Landlord, who had Orders to demand them from me, and to examine them. What he did with them, I know not; but when he returned them, he aſked me if I knew their Contents; upon which, telling him, I was wholly ignorant thereof, he promiſed to get them tranſlated for me. He ſoon returned with the Tranſlations; but how great was my Surprize, when caſting an Eye upon them, I found, that the *Muſcovites*, not contented with having forbid me, by the Mouth of their Secretary, ever to ſet Foot into their Dominions again, had even inſerted the ſame Compliment in their Paſſes. Tho' a long Captivity,

tivity, and other ill Uſage I had already met with, in *Muſcovy*, had accuſtomed me to bear every Thing patiently, it was impoſſible for me to put up quietly with this. I had Reaſon to fear, that General *Cat*, after having ſeen the Contents of theſe Paſſes, might take me for a Perſon who had been guilty of ſome enormous Crime in *Muſcovy*, and had been ſhamefully baniſhed for it. This lay the heavier upon me, as I was very much tired, and withal, in Want of Money, and, therefore, under a Neceſſity of making ſome Stay at *Konigſburg*. All my Thoughts were taken up with this prepoſterous Event, which ſtruck at my Reputation. From this Moment I forgot all the other Evils I had ſuffered, the Dangers I had been expoſed to, the Captivity I had undergone, the Indignities which had been offered me; nay, the very Priſon it ſelf, which had brought me to the Brink of the Grave; all this, I ſay, was as nothing to me, in Compariſon with the melancholly State I was now reduced to. I want Terms to expreſs the Vileneſs of this Action.

With this extraordinary *Cataſtrophe*, I ſhall finiſh the Narrative of my Adventures. The Compliance which is due to the great Intimacy and Friendſhip that is between us, has engaged me in it: But for a fuller Account of them, I muſt reſerve it till I have the Happineſs of embracing you. I am now, Dear Sir, juſt upon my Departure to be with you, ſince you invite, and ſo earneſtly preſs me to it. I ſhall once more give my ſelf up to the Mercy of an Element, which ſeems to threaten me with new Misfortunes. Heaven ſure is provoked againſt me, and I fear that

Fata mihi totum me ſint agitanda per orbem.

F I N I S.

BRITISH 5 NO72 MUSEUM